

WRITINGS OF TATIAN THE ASSYRIAN

by Tatian the Assyrian

Writings of Tatian the Assyrian (c. AD 180). Tatian the Assyrian was an early church father whose writings have been preserved for the edification of the church.

3 Chapters

Table of Contents

0. Writings of Tatian the Assyrian
1. Address of Tatian to the Greeks
2. Diatessaron

Writings of Tatian the Assyrian

Address of Tatian to the Greeks

Address of Tatian to the Greeks.

Chapter I.-The Greeks Claim, Without Reason, the Invention of the Arts.

Chapter II.-The Vices and Errors of the Philosophers.

Chapter III.-Ridicule of the Philosophers.

Chapter IV.-The Christians Worship God Alone.

Chapter V.-The Doctrine of the Christians as to the Creation of the World.

Chapter VI.-Christians' Belief in the Resurrection.

Chapter VII.-Concerning the Fall of Man.

Chapter VIII.-The Demons Sin Among Mankind.

Chapter IX.-They Give Rise to Superstitions.

Chapter X.-Ridicule of the Heathen Divinities.

Chapter XI.-The Sin of Men Due Not to Fate, But to Free-Will.

Chapter XII.-The Two Kinds of Spirits.

Chapter XIII.-Theory of the Soul's Immortality.

Chapter XIV.-The Demons Shall Be Punished More Severely Than Men.

Chapter XV.-Necessity of a Union with the Holy Spirit.

Chapter XVI.-Vain Display of Power by the Demons.

Chapter XVII.-They Falsely Promise Health to Their Votaries.

Chapter XVIII.-They Deceive, Instead of Healing.

Chapter XIX.-Depravity Lies at the Bottom of Demon-Worship.

Chapter XX.-Thanks are Ever Due to God.

Chapter XXI.-Doctrines of the Christians and Greeks Respecting God Compared.

Chapter XXII.-Ridicule of the Solemnities of the Greeks.

Chapter XXIII.-Of the Pugilists and Gladiators, Chapter XXIV.-Of the Other Public Amusements.

Chapter XXV.-Boastings and Quarrels of the Philosophers.

Chapter XXVI.-Ridicule of the Studies of the Greeks.

Chapter XXVII.-The Christians are Hated Unjustly.

Chapter XXVIII.-Condemnation of the Greek Legislation.

Chapter XXIX.-Account of Tatian's Conversion.

Chapter XXX.-How He Resolved to Resist the Devil.

Chapter XXXI.-The Philosophy of the Christians More Ancient Than that of the Greeks.

Chapter XXXII.-The Doctrine of the Christians, is Opposed to Dissensions, and Fitted for All.

Chapter XXXIII.-Vindication of Christian Women.

Chapter XXXIV.-Ridicule of the Statues Erected by the Greeks.

Chapter XXXV.-Tatian Speaks as an Eye-Witness.

Chapter XXXVI.-Testimony of the Chaldeans to the Antiquity of Moses.

Chapter XXXVII.-Testimony of the Phoenicians.

Chapter XXXVIII.-The Egyptians Place Moses in the Reign of Inachus.

Chapter XXXIX.-Catalogue of the Argive Kings.

Chapter XL.-Moses More Ancient and Credible Than the Heathen Heroes.

Chapter XLI.

Chapter XLII.-Concluding Statement as to the Author.

Fragments.98 Address of Tatian to the Greeks.

----- Chapter I.-The Greeks Claim, Without Reason, the Invention of the Arts. Be not, O Greeks, so very hostilely disposed towards the Barbarians, nor look with ill will on their opinions. For which of your institutions has not been derived from the Barbarians? The most eminent of the Telmessians invented the art of divining by dreams; the Carians, that of prognosticating by the stars; the Phrygians and the most ancient Isaurians, augury by the flight of birds; the Cyprians, the art of inspecting victims. To the Babylonians you owe astronomy; to the Persians, magic; to the Egyptians, geometry; to the Phoenicians, instruction by alphabetic writing. Cease, then, to miscall these imitations inventions of your own. Orpheus, again, taught you poetry and song; from him, too, you learned the mysteries. The Tuscans taught you the plastic art; from the annals of the Egyptians you learned to write history; you acquired the art of playing the flute from Marsyas and Olympus,-these two rustic Phrygians constructed the harmony of the shepherd's pipe. The Tyrrhenians invented the trumpet; the Cyclopes, the smith's art; and a woman who was formerly a queen of the Persians, as Hellanicus tells us, the method of joining together epistolary tablets:1 her name was Atossa. Wherefore lay aside this conceit, and be not ever boasting of your elegance of diction; for, while you applaud yourselves, your own people will of course side with you. But it becomes a man of sense to wait for the testimony of others, and it becomes men to be of one accord also in the pronunciation of their language. But, as matters stand, to you alone it has happened not to speak alike even in common intercourse; for the way of speaking among the

Dorians is not the same as that of the inhabitants of Attica, nor do the Aeolians speak like the Ionians. And, since such a discrepancy exists where it ought not to be, I am at a loss whom to call a Greek. And, what is strangest of all, you hold in honour expressions not of native growth, and by the intermixture of barbaric words have made your language a medley. On this account we have renounced your wisdom, though I was once a great proficient in it; for, as the comic poet² says,- "These are gleaners' grapes and small talk,- Twittering places of swallows, corrupters of art."

Yet those who eagerly pursue it shout lustily, and croak like so many ravens. You have, too, contrived the art of rhetoric to serve injustice and slander, selling the free power of your speech for hire, and often representing the same thing at one time as right, at another time as not good. The poetic art, again, you employ to describe battles, and the amours of the gods, and the corruption of the soul.

Chapter II.-The Vices and Errors of the Philosophers.

What noble thing have you produced by your pursuit of philosophy? Who of your most eminent men has been free from vain boasting? Diogenes, who made such a parade of his independence with his tub, was seized with a bowel complaint through eating a raw polypus, and so lost his life by gluttony. Aristippus, walking about in a purple robe, led a profligate life, in accordance with his professed opinions. Plato, a philosopher, was sold by Dionysius for his gormandizing propensities. And Aristotle, who absurdly placed a limit to Providence and made happiness to consist in the things which give pleasure, quite contrary to his duty as a preceptor flattered Alexander, forgetful that he was but a youth; and he, showing how well he had learned the lessons of his master, because his friend would not worship him shut him up and carried him about like a bear or a leopard. He in fact obeyed strictly the precepts of his teacher in displaying manliness and courage by feasting, and transfixing with his spear his intimate and most beloved friend, and then, under a semblance of grief, weeping and starving himself, that he might not incur the hatred of his friends. I could laugh at those also who in the present day adhere to his tenets,-people who say that sublunary things are not under the care of Providence; and so, being nearer the earth than the moon, and below its orbit, they themselves look after what is thus left uncared for; and as for those who have neither beauty, nor wealth, nor bodily strength, nor high birth, they have no happiness, according to Aristotle. Let such men philosophize, for me!

Chapter III.-Ridicule of the Philosophers.

I cannot approve of Heraclitus, who, being self-taught and arrogant, said, "I have explored myself." Nor can I praise him for hiding his poem³ in the temple of Artemis, in order that it might be published afterwards as a mystery; and those who take an interest in such things say that Euripides the tragic poet came there and read it, and, gradually learning it by heart, carefully handed down to posterity this darkness⁴ of Heraclitus. Death, however, demonstrated the stupidity of this man; for, being attacked by dropsy, as he had studied the art of medicine as well as philosophy, he plastered himself with cow-dung, which, as it hardened, contracted the flesh of his whole body, so that he was pulled in pieces, and thus died. Then, one cannot listen to Zeno, who declares that at the conflagration the same man will rise again to perform the same actions as before; for instance, Anytus and Miletus to accuse, Busiris to murder his guests, and Hercules to repeat his labours; and in this doctrine of the conflagration he introduces more wicked than just persons-one Socrates and a Hercules, and a few more of the same class, but not many, for the

bad will be found far more numerous than the good. And according to him the Deity will manifestly be the author of evil, dwelling in sewers and worms, and in the perpetrators of impiety. The eruptions of fire in Sicily, moreover, confute the empty boasting of Empedocles, in that, though he was no god, he falsely almost gave himself out for one. I laugh, too, at the old wife's talk of Pherecydes, and the doctrine inherited from him by Pythagoras, and that of Plato, an imitation of his, though some think otherwise. And who would give his approval to the cynogamy of Crates, and not rather, repudiating the wild and tumid speech of those who resemble him, turn to the investigation of what truly deserves attention? Wherefore be not led away by the solemn assemblies of philosophers who are no philosophers, who dogmatize one against the other, though each one vents but the crude fancies of the moment. They have, moreover, many collisions among themselves; each one hates the other; they indulge in conflicting opinions, and their arrogance makes them eager for the highest places. It would better become them, moreover, not to pay court to kings unbidden, nor to flatter men at the head of affairs, but to wait till the great ones come to them.

Chapter IV.-The Christians Worship God Alone. For what reason, men of Greece, do you wish to bring the civil powers, as in a pugilistic encounter, into collision with us? And, if I am not disposed to comply with the usages of some of them, why am I to be abhorred as a vile miscreant? Does the sovereign order the payment of tribute, I am ready to render it. Does my master command me to act as a bondsman and to serve, I acknowledge the serfdom. Man is to be honoured as a fellow-man; God alone is to be feared,-He who is not visible to human eyes, nor comes within the compass of human art. Only when I am commanded to deny Him, will I not obey, but will rather die than show myself false and ungrateful. Our God did not begin to be in time: He alone is without beginning, and He Himself is the beginning of all things. God is a Spirit, not pervading matter, but the Maker of material spirits, and of the forms that are in matter; He is invisible, impalpable, being Himself the Father of both sensible and invisible things. Him we know from His creation, and apprehend His invisible power by His works. I refuse to adore that workmanship which He has made for our sakes. The sun and moon were made for us: how, then, can I adore my own servants? How can I speak of stocks and stones as gods? For the Spirit that pervades matter is inferior to the more divine spirit; and this, even when assimilated to the soul, is not to be honoured equally with the perfect God. Nor even ought the ineffable God to be presented with gifts; for He who is in want of nothing is not to be misrepresented by us as though He were indigent. But I will set forth our views more distinctly.

Chapter V.-The Doctrine of the Christians as to the Creation of the World.

God was in the beginning; but the beginning, we have been taught, is the power of the Logos. For the Lord of the universe, who is Himself the necessary ground (u9po/stasij) of all being, in as much as no creature was yet in existence, was alone; but in as much as He was all power, Himself the necessary ground of things visible and invisible, with Him were all things; with Him, by Logos-power (dia\ logikh=j duna/mewj), the Logos Himself also, who was in Him, subsists. And by His simple will the Logos springs forth; and the Logos, not coming forth in vain, becomes the first-begotten work of the Father. Him (the Logos) we know to be the beginning of the world. But He came into being by participation, not by abscission; for what is cut off is separated from the original substance, but that which comes by participation, making its choice of function, does not render him deficient from whom it is taken. For just as from one torch many fires are lighted,

but the light of the first torch is not lessened by the kindling of many torches, so the Logos, coming forth from the Logos-power of the Father, has not divested of the Logos-power Him who begat Him. I myself, for instance, talk, and you hear; yet, certainly, I who converse do not become destitute of speech (lo/goj) by the transmission of speech, but by the utterance of my voice I endeavour to reduce to order the unarranged matter in your minds. And as the Logos¹⁵ begotten in the beginning, begat in turn our world, having first created for Himself the necessary matter, so also I, in imitation of the Logos, being begotten again,¹⁶ and having become possessed of the truth, am trying to reduce to order the confused matter which is kindred with myself. For matter is not, like God, without beginning, nor, as having no beginning, is of equal power with God ; it is begotten, and not produced by any other being, but brought into existence by the Framer of all things alone.

Chapter VI.-Christians' Belief in the Resurrection. And on this account we believe that there will be a resurrection of bodies after the consummation of all things; not, as the Stoics affirm, according to the return of certain cycles, the same things being produced and destroyed for no useful purpose, but a resurrection once for all,¹⁷ when our periods of existence are completed, and in consequence solely of the constitution of things under which men alone live, for the purpose of passing judgment upon them. Nor is sentence upon us passed by Minos or Rhadamanthus, before whose decease not a single soul, according to the mythic tales, was judged; but the Creator, God Himself, becomes the arbiter. And, although you regard us as mere triflers and babblers, it troubles us not, since we have faith in this doctrine. For just as, not existing before I was born, I knew not who I was, and only existed in the potentiality (u0po/stasij) Of fleshly matter, but being born, after a former state of nothingness, I have obtained through my birth a certainty of my existence; in the same way, having been born, and through death existing no longer, and seen no longer, I shall exist again, just as before I was not, but was afterwards born. Even though fire destroy all traces of my flesh, the world receives the vaporized matter ;¹⁸ and though dispersed through rivers and seas, or torn in pieces by wild beasts, I am laid up in the storehouses of a wealthy Lord. And, although the poor and the godless know not what is stored up, yet God the Sovereign, when He pleases, will restore the substance that is visible to Him alone to its pristine condition.

Chapter VII.-Concerning the Fall of Man. For the heavenly Logos, a spirit emanating from the Father and a Logos from the Logos-power, in imitation of the Father who begat Him made man an image of immortality, so that, as incorruption is with God, in like manner, man, sharing in a part of God, might have the immortal principle also. The Logos,¹⁹ too, before the creation of men, was the Framer of angels. And each of these two orders of creatures was made free to act as it pleased, not having the nature of good, which again is with God alone, but is brought to perfection in men through their freedom of choice, in order that the bad man may be justly punished, having become depraved through his own fault, but the just man be deservedly praised for his virtuous deeds, since in the exercise of his free choice he refrained from transgressing the will of God. Such is the constitution of things in reference to angels and men. And the power of the Logos, having in itself a faculty to foresee future events, not as fated, but as taking place by the choice of free agents, foretold from time to time the issues of things to come; it also became a forbiddor of wickedness by means of prohibitions, and the encomiast of those who remained good. And, when men attached themselves to one who was more subtle than the rest, having regard to his being

the first-born,²⁰ and declared him to be God, though he was resisting' the law of God, then the power of the Logos excluded the beginner of the folly and his adherents from all fellowship with Himself. And so he who was made in the likeness of God, since the more powerful spirit is separated from him, becomes mortal; but that first-begotten one through his transgression and ignorance becomes a demon; and they who imitated him, that is his illusions, are become a host of demons, and through their freedom of choice have been given up to their own infatuation.

Chapter VIII.-The Demons Sin Among Mankind. But men form the material ($\mu\text{p}\text{o}\text{q}\text{e}\text{s}\text{i}\text{j}$) of their apostasy. For, having shown them a plan of the position of the stars, like dice-players, they introduced Fate, a flagrant injustice. For the judge and the judged are made so by Fate; the murderers and the murdered, the wealthy and the needy, are the offspring of the same Fate; and every nativity is regarded as a theatrical entertainment by those beings of whom Homer says,-

"Among the gods Rose laughter irrepressible."²¹ But must not those who are spectators of single combats and are partisans on one side or the other, and he who marries and is a paederast and an adulterer, who laughs and is angry, who flees and is wounded, be regarded as mortals? For, by whatever actions they manifest to men their characters, by these they prompt their hearers to copy their example. And are not the demons themselves, with Zeus at their head, subjected to Fate, being overpowered by the same passions as men? And, besides, how are those beings to be worshipped among whom there exists such a great contrariety of opinions? For Rhea, whom the inhabitants of the Phrygian mountains call Cybele, enacted emasculation on account of Attis, of whom she was enamoured; but Aphrodité is delighted with conjugal embraces. Artemis is a poisoner; Apollo heals diseases. And after the decapitation of the Gorgon, the beloved of Poseidon, whence sprang the horse Pegasus and Chrysaor, Athene and Asclepios divided between them the drops of blood; and, while he saved men's lives by means of them, she, by the same blood, became a homicide and the instigator of wars. From regard to her reputation, as it appears to me, the Athenians attributed to the earth the son born of her connection with Hephaestos, that Athene might not be thought to be deprived of her virility by Hephaestos, as Atalanta by Meleaget. This limping manufacturer of buckles and earrings, as is likely, deceived the motherless child and orphan with these girlish ornaments. Poseidon frequents the seas; Ares delights in wars; Apollo is a player on the cithara; Dionysus is absolute sovereign of the Thebans; Kronos is a tyrannicide; Zeus has intercourse with his own daughter, who becomes pregnant by him. I may instance, too, Eleusis, and the mystic Dragon, and Orpheus, who says,- "Close the gates against the profane!"

Aïdoneus carries off Koré, and his deeds have been made into mysteries; Demeter bewails her daughter, and some persons are deceived by the Athenians. In the precincts of the temple of the son of Leto is a spot called Omphalos; but Omphalos is the burial-place of Dionysus. You now I laud, O Daphne!-by conquering the incontinence of Apollo, you disproved his power of vaticination; for, not foreseeing what would occur to you,²² he derived no advantage from his art. Let the far-shooting god tell me how Zephyrus slew Hyacinthus. Zephyrus conquered him; and in accordance with the saying of the tragic poet,- "A breeze is the most honourable chariot of the gods,"²³ - conquered by a slight breeze, Apollo lost his beloved.

Chapter IX.-They Give Rise to Superstitions.

Such are the demons; these are they who laid down the doctrine of Fate. Their fundamental principle was the placing of animals in the heavens. For the creeping things on the earth, and those that swim in the waters, and the quadrupeds on the mountains, with which they lived when expelled from heaven, these they dignified with celestial honour, in order that they might themselves be thought to remain in heaven, and, by placing the constellations there, might make to appear rational the irrational course of life on earth.²⁴ Thus the high-spirited and he who is crushed with toil, the temperate and the intemperate, the indigent and the wealthy, are what they are simply from the controllers of their nativity. For the delineation of the zodiacal circle is the work of gods. And, when the light of one of them predominates, as they express it, it deprives all the rest of their honour; and he who now is conquered, at another time gains the predominance. And the seven planets are well pleased with them,²⁵ as if they were amusing themselves with dice. But we are superior to Fate, and instead of wandering (planhtw=n) demons, we have learned to know one Lord who wanders not; and, as we do not follow the guidance of Fate, we reject its lawgivers. Tell me, I adjure you²⁶ did Triptolemus sow wheat and prove a benefactor to the Athenians after their sorrow? And why was not Demeter, before she lost her daughter, a benefactress to men? The Dog of Erigone is shown in the heavens, and the Scorpion the helper of Artemis, and Chiron the Centaur, and the divided Argo, and the Bear of Callisto. Yet how, before these performed the aforesaid deeds, were the heavens unadorned? And to whom will it not appear ridiculous that the Deltotum²⁷ should be placed among the stars, according to some, on account of Sicily, or, as others say, on account of the first letter in the name of Zeus (Dio/j)? For why are not Sardinia and Cyprus honoured in heaven? And why have not the letters of the names of the brothers of Zeus, who shared the kingdom with him, been fixed there too? And how is it that Kronos, who was put in chains and ejected from his kingdom, is constituted a manager²⁸ of Fate? How, too, can he give kingdoms who no longer reigns himself? Reject, then, these absurdities, and do not become transgressors by hating us unjustly.

Chapter X.-Ridicule of the Heathen Divinities.

There are legends of the metamorphosis of men: with you the gods also are metamorphosed. Rhea becomes a tree; Zeus a dragon, on account of Persephone; the sisters of Phaëthon are changed into poplars, and Leto into a bird of little value, on whose account what is now Delos was called Ortygia. A god, forsooth, becomes a swan, or takes the form of an eagle, and, making Ganymede his cupbearer, glories in a vile affection. How can I reverence gods who are eager for presents, and angry if they do not receive them? Let them have their Fate! I am not willing to adore wandering stars. What is that hair of Berenicé? Where were her stars before her death? And how was the dead Antinous fixed as a beautiful youth in the moon? Who carried him thither: unless perchance, as men, perjuring themselves for hire, are credited when they say in ridicule of the gods that kings have ascended into heaven, so some one, in like manner, has put this man also among the gods,²⁹ and been recompensed with honour and reward? Why have you robbed God? Why do you dishonour His workmanship? You sacrifice a sheep, and you adore the same animal. The Bull is in the heavens, and you slaughter its image. The Kneeler³⁰ crushes a noxious animal; and the eagle that devours the man-maker Prometheus is honoured. The swan is noble, forsooth, because it was an adulterer; and the Dioscuri, living on alternate days, the ravishers of the daughters of Leucippus, are also noble! Better still is Helen, who forsook the flaxen-haired Menelaus, and followed the turbaned and gold-adorned Paris. A just man also is Sophron,³¹ who

transported this adulteress to the Elysian fields! But even the daughter of Tyndarus is not gifted with immortality, and Euripides has wisely represented this woman as put to death by Orestes.

Chapter XI.-The Sin of Men Due Not to Fate, But to Free-Will.

How, then, shall I admit this nativity according to Fate, when I see such managers of Fate? I do not wish to be a king; I am not anxious to be rich; I decline military command; I detest fornication; I am not impelled by an insatiable love of gain to go to sea; I do not contend for chaplets; I am free from a mad thirst for fame; I despise death; I am superior to every kind of disease; grief does not consume my soul. Am I a slave, I endure servitude. Am I free, I do not make a vaunt of my good birth. I see that the same sun is for all, and one death for all, whether they live in pleasure or destitution. The rich man sows, and the poor man partakes of the same sowing. The wealthiest die, and beggars have the same limits to their life. The rich lack many things, and are glorious only through the estimation they are held in;³² but the poor man and he who has very moderate desires, seeking as he does only the things suited to his lot, more easily obtains his purpose. How is it that you are fated to be sleepless through avarice? Why are you fated to grasp at things often, and often to die? Die to the world, repudiating the madness that is in it. Live to God, and by apprehending Him lay aside your old nature.³³ We were not created to die, but we die by our own fault.³⁴ Our free-will has destroyed us; we who were free have become slaves; we have been sold through sin. Nothing evil has been created by God; we Ourselves have manifested wickedness; but we, who have manifested it, are able again to reject it.

Chapter XII.-The Two Kinds of Spirits.

We recognise two varieties of spirit, one of which is called the soul³⁵ (yukh/), but the other is greater than the soul, an image and likeness of God: both existed in the first men, that in one sense they might be material (u9likoi/), and in another superior to matter. The case stands thus: we can see that the whole structure of the world, and the whole creation, has been produced from matter, and the matter itself brought into existence³⁶ by God; so that on the one hand it may be regarded as rude and unformed before it was separated into parts, and on the other as arranged in beauty and order after the separation was made. Therefore in that separation the heavens were made of matter, and the stars that are in them; and the earth and all that is upon it has a similar constitution: so that there is a common origin of all things. But, while such is the case, there yet are certain differences in the things made of matter, so that one is more beautiful, and another is beautiful but surpassed by something better. For as the constitution of the body is under one management, and is engaged in doing that which is the cause of its having been made,³⁷ yet though this is the case, there are certain differences of dignity in it, and the eye is one thing, and another the ear, and another the arrangement of the hair and the distribution of the intestines, and the compacting together of the marrow and the bones and the tendons; and though one part differs from another, there is yet all the harmony of a concert of music in their arrangement;-in like manner the world, according to the power of its Maker containing some things of superior splendour, but some unlike these, received by the will of the Creator a material spirit. And these things severally it is possible for him to perceive who does not conceitedly reject those most divine explanations which in the course of time have been consigned to writing, and make those who study them great lovers of God. Therefore the demons,³⁸ as you call them, having received their structure from matter and obtained the spirit which inheres in it, became intemperate and greedy;

some few, indeed, turning to what was purer, but others choosing what was inferior in matter, and conforming their manner of life to it. These beings, produced from matter, but very remote from right conduct, you, O Greeks, worship. For, being turned by their own folly to vain gloriousness, and shaking off the reins [of authority], they have been forward to become robbers of Deity; and the Lord of all has suffered them to besport themselves, till the world, coming to an end, be dissolved, and the Judge appear, and all those men who, while assailed by the demons, strive after the knowledge of the perfect God obtain as the result of their conflicts a more perfect testimony in the day of judgment. There is, then, a spirit in the stars, a spirit in angels, a spirit in plants and the waters, a spirit in men, a spirit in animals; but, though one and the same, it has differences in itself.³⁹ And while we say these things not from mere hearsay, nor from probable conjectures and sophistical reasoning, but using words of a certain diviner speech, do you who are willing hasten to learn. And you who do not reject with contempt the Scythian Anacharsis, do not disdain to be taught by those who follow a barbaric code of laws. Give at least as favourable a reception to our tenets as you would to the prognostications of the Babylonians. Harken to us when we speak, if only as you would to an oracular oak. And yet the things just referred to are the trickeries of frenzied demons, while the doctrines we inculcate are far beyond the apprehension of the world.

Chapter XIII.-Theory of the Soul's Immortality. The soul is not in itself immortal, O Greeks, but mortal.⁴⁰ Yet it is possible for it not to die. If, indeed, it knows not the truth, it dies, and is dissolved with the body, but rises again at last at the end of the world with the body, receiving death by punishment in immortality. But, again, if it acquires the knowledge of God, it dies not, although for a time it be dissolved. In itself it is darkness, and there is nothing luminous in it. And this is the meaning of the saying, "The darkness comprehendeth not the light."⁴¹ For the soul does not preserve the spirit, but is preserved by it, and the light comprehends the darkness. The Logos, in truth, is the light of God, but the ignorant soul is darkness. On this account, if it continues solitary, it tends downward towards matter, and dies with the flesh; but, if it enters into union with the Divine Spirit, it is no longer helpless, but ascends to the regions whither the Spirit guides it: for the dwelling-place of the spirit is above, but the origin of the soul is from beneath. Now, in the beginning the spirit was a constant companion of the soul, but the spirit forsook it because it was not willing to follow. Yet, retaining as it were a spark of its power, though unable by reason of the separation to discern the perfect, while seeking for God it fashioned to itself in its wandering many gods, following the sophistries of the demons. But the Spirit of God is not with all, but, taking up its abode with those who live justly, and intimately combining with the soul, by prophecies it announced hidden things to other souls. And the souls that are obedient to wisdom have attracted to themselves the cognate spirit;⁴² but the disobedient, rejecting the minister of the suffering God,⁴³ have shown themselves to be fighters against God, rather than His worshippers.

Chapter XIV.-The Demons Shall Be Punished More Severely Than Men. And such are you also, O Greeks,-profuse in words, but with minds strangely warped; and you acknowledge the dominion of many rather than the rule of one, accustoming yourselves to follow demons as if they were mighty. For, as the inhuman robber is wont to overpower those like himself by daring; so the demons, going to great lengths in wickedness, have utterly deceived the souls among you which are left to themselves by ignorance and false appearances. These! beings do not indeed die easily, for they do not partake of flesh; but while living they practise the ways of death, and die themselves as

often as they teach their followers to sin. Therefore, what is now their chief distinction, that they do not die like men, they will retain when about to suffer punishment: they will not partake of everlasting life, so as to receive this instead of death in a blessed immortality. And as we, to whom it now easily happens to die, afterwards receive the immortal with enjoyment, or the painful with immortality, so the demons, who abuse the present life to purposes of wrong-doing, dying continually even while they live, will have hereafter the same immortality, like that which they had during the time they lived, but in its nature like that of men, who voluntarily performed what the demons prescribed to them during their lifetime. And do not fewer kinds of sin break out among men owing to the brevity of their lives,⁴⁴ while on the part of these demons transgression is more abundant owing to their boundless existence?

Chapter XV.-Necessity of a Union with the Holy Spirit. But further, it becomes us now to seek for what we once had, but have lost, to unite the soul with the Holy Spirit, and to strive after union with God. The human soul consists of many parts, and is not simple; it is composite, so as to manifest itself through the body; for neither could it ever appear by itself without the body, nor does the flesh rise again without the soul. Man is not, as the croaking philosophers say, merely a rational animal, capable of understanding and knowledge; for, according to them, even irrational creatures appear possessed of understanding and knowledge. But man alone is the image and likeness of God; and I mean by man, not one who performs actions similar to those of animals, but one who has advanced far beyond mere humanity-to God Himself. This question we have discussed more minutely in the treatise concerning animals. But the principal point to be spoken of now is, what is intended by the image and likeness of God. That which cannot be compared is no other than abstract being; but that which is compared is no other than that which is like. The perfect God is without flesh; but man is flesh. The bond of the flesh is the soul;⁴⁵ that which encloses the soul is the flesh. Such is the nature of man's constitution; and, if it be like a temple, God is pleased to dwell in it by the spirit, His representative; but, if it be not such a habitation, man excels the wild beasts in articulate language only,-in other respects his manner of life is like theirs, as one who is not a likeness of God. But none of the demons possess flesh; their structure is spiritual, like that of fire or air. And only by those whom the Spirit of God dwells in and fortifies are the bodies of the demons easily seen, not at all by others,-I mean those who possess only soul;⁴⁶ for the inferior has not the ability to apprehend the superior. On this account the nature of the demons has no place for repentance; for they are the reflection of matter and of wickedness. But matter desired to exercise lordship over the soul; and according to their free-will these gave laws of death to men; but men, after the loss of immortality, have conquered death by submitting to death in faith;⁴⁷ and by repentance a call has been given to them, according to the word which says, "Since they were made a little lower than the angels."⁴⁸ And, for every one who has been conquered, it is possible again to conquer, if he rejects the condition which brings death. And what that is, may be easily seen by men who long for immortality.

Chapter XVI.-Vain Display of Power by the Demons. But the demons⁴⁹ who rule over men are not the souls of men; for how should these be capable of action after death? unless man, who while living was void of understanding and power, should be believed when dead to be endowed with more of active power. But neither could this be the case, as we have shown elsewhere.⁵⁰ And it is difficult to conceive that the immortal soul, which is impeded by the members of the body, should become more intelligent when it has migrated from it. For the demons, inspired with frenzy against

men by reason of their own wickedness, pervert their minds, which already incline downwards, by various deceptive scenic representations, that they may be disabled from rising to the path that leads to heaven. But from us the things which are in the world are not hidden, and the divine is easily apprehended by us if the power that makes souls immortal visits us. The demons are seen also by the men possessed of soul, when, as sometimes, they exhibit themselves to men, either that they may be thought to be something, or as evil-disposed friends may do harm to them as to enemies, or afford occasions of doing them honour to those who resemble them. For, if it were possible, they would without doubt pull down heaven itself with the rest of creation. But now this they can by no means effect, for they have not the power; but they make war by means of the lower matter against the matter that is like themselves. Should any one wish to conquer them, let him repudiate matter. Being armed with the breastplate⁵¹ of the celestial Spirit, he will be able to preserve all that is encompassed by it. There are, indeed, diseases and disturbances of the matter that is in us; but, when such things happen, the demons ascribe the causes of them to themselves, and approach a man whenever disease lays hold of him. Sometimes they themselves disturb the habit of the body by a tempest of folly; but, being smitten by the word of God, they depart in terror, and the sick man is healed.

Chapter XVII.-They Falsely Promise Health to Their Votaries.

Concerning the sympathies and antipathies of Democritus what can we say but this, that, according to the common saying, the man of Abdera is Abderiloquent? But, as he who gave the name to the city, a friend of Hercules as it is said, was devoured by the horses of Diomedes, so he who boasted of the Magian Ostances⁵² will be delivered up in the day of consummation⁵³ as fuel for the eternal fire. And you, if you do not cease from your laughter, will gain the same punishment as the jugglers. Wherefore, O Greeks, hearken to me, addressing you as from an eminence, nor in mockery transfer your own want of reason to the herald of the truth. A diseased affection (*pa/qoj*) is not destroyed by a counter-affection (*antipa/qeia*), nor is a maniac cured by hanging little amulets of leather upon him. There are visitations of demons; and he who is sick, and he who says he is in love, and he who hates, and he who wishes to be revenged, accept them as helpers. And this is the method of their operation: just as the forms of alphabetic letters and the lines composed of them cannot of themselves indicate what is meant, but men have invented for themselves signs of their thoughts, knowing by their peculiar combination what the order of the letters was intended to express; so, in like manner, the various kinds of roots and the mutual relation of the sinews and bones can effect nothing of themselves, but are the elemental matter with which the depravity of the demons works, who have determined for what purpose each of them is available. And, when they see that men consent to be served by means of such things, they take them and make them their slaves. But how can it be honourable to minister to adulteries? How can it be noble to stimulate men in hating one another? Or how is it becoming to ascribe to matter the relief of the insane, and not to God? For by their art they turn men aside from the pious acknowledgment of God, leading them to place confidence in herbs and roots.⁵⁴ But God, if He had prepared these things to effect just what men wish, would be a Producer of evil things; whereas He Himself produced everything which has good qualities, but the profligacy of the demons has made use of the productions of nature for evil purposes, and the appearance of evil which these wear is from them, and not from the perfect God. For how comes it to pass that when alive I was in no wise evil, but that now I am dead and can do nothing, my remains, which are incapable of motion or even

sense, should effect something cognizable by the senses? And how shall he who has died by the most miserable death be able to assist in avenging any one? If this were possible, much more might he defend himself from his own enemy; being able to assist others, much more might he constitute himself his own avenger.

Chapter XVIII.-They Deceive, Instead of Healing. But medicine and everything included in it is an invention of the same kind. If any one is healed by matter, through trusting to it, much more will he be healed by having recourse to the power of God. As noxious preparations are material compounds, so are curatives of the same nature. If, however, we reject the baser matter, some persons often endeavour to heal by a union of one of these bad things with some other, and will make use of the bad to attain the good. But, just as he who dines with a robber, though he may not be a robber himself, partakes of the punishment on account of his intimacy with him, so he who is not bad but associates with the bad, having dealings with them for some supposed good, will be punished by God the Judge for partnership in the same object. Why is he who trusts in the system of matter⁵⁵ not willing to trust in God? For what reason do you not approach the more powerful Lord, but rather seek to cure yourself, like the dog with grass, or the stag with a viper, or the hog with river-crabs, or the lion with apes? Why do you deify the objects of nature? And why, when you cure your neighbour, are you called a benefactor? Yield to the power of the Logos! The demons do not cure, but by their art make men their captives. And the most admirable Justin⁵⁶ has rightly denounced them as robbers. For, as it is the practice of some to capture persons and then to restore them to their friends for a ransom, so those who are esteemed gods, invading the bodies of certain persons, and producing a sense of their presence by dreams, command them to come forth into public, and in the sight of all, when they have taken their fill of the things of this world, fly away from the sick, and, destroying the disease which they had produced, restore men to their former state

Chapter XIX.-Depravity Lies at the Bottom of Demon-Worship. But do you, who have not the perception of these things, be instructed by us who know them: though you do profess to despise death, and to be sufficient of yourselves for everything. But this is a discipline in which your philosophers are so greatly deficient, that some of them receive from the king of the Romans 600 aurei yearly, for no useful service they perform, but that they may not even wear a long beard without being paid for it! Crescens, who made his nest in the great city, surpassed all men in unnatural love (paiderasti/a), and was strongly addicted to the love of money. Yet this man, who professed to despise death, was so afraid of death, that he endeavoured to inflict on Justin, and indeed on me, the punishment of death, as being an evil, because by proclaiming the truth he convicted the philosophers of being gluttons and cheats. But whom of the philosophers, save you only, was he accustomed to inveigh against? If you say, in agreement with our tenets, that death is not to be dreaded, do not court death from an insane love of fame among men, like Anaxagoras, but become despisers of death by reason of the knowledge of God. The construction of the world is excellent, but the life men live in it is bad; and we may see those greeted with applause as in a solemn assembly who know not God. For what is divination? and why are ye deceived by it? It is a minister to thee of worldly lusts. You wish to make war, and you take Apollo as a counsellor of slaughter. You want to carry off a maiden by force, and you select a divinity to be your accomplice. You are ill by your own fault; and, as Agamemnon⁵⁷ wished for ten councillors, so you wish to have gods with you. Some woman by drinking water gets into a frenzy, and loses her senses by the fumes of frankincense, and you say that she has the gift of prophecy. Apollo was a prognosticator and a teacher of soothsayers: in the matter of Daphne he deceived himself. An oak,

forsooth, is oracular, and birds utter presages! And so you are inferior to animals and plants! It would surely be a fine thing for you to become a divining rod, or to assume the wings of a bird! He who makes you fond of money also foretells your getting rich; he who excites to seditions and wars also predicts victory in war. If you are superior to the passions, you will despise all worldly things. Do not abhor us who have made this attainment, but, repudiating the demons,⁵⁸ follow the one God. "All things⁵⁹ were made by Him, and without Him not one thing was made." If there is poison in natural productions, this has supervened through our sinfulness. I am able to show the perfect truth of these things; only do you hearken, and he who believes will understand.

Chapter XX.-Thanks are Ever Due to God.

Even if you be healed by drugs (I grant you that point by courtesy), yet it behoves you to give testimony of the cure to God. For the world still draws us down, and through weakness I incline towards matter. For the wings of the soul were the perfect spirit, but, having cast this off through sin, it flutters like a nestling and falls to the ground. Having left the heavenly companionship, it hankers after communion with inferior things. The demons were driven forth to another abode; the first created human beings were expelled from their place: the one, indeed, were cast down from heaven; but the other were driven from earth, yet not out of this earth, but from a more excellent order of things than exists here now. And now it behoves us, yearning after that pristine state, to put aside everything that proves a hindrance. The heavens are not infinite, O man, but finite and bounded; and beyond them are the superior worlds which have not a change of seasons, by which various, diseases are produced, but, partaking of every happy temperature, have perpetual day, and light unapproachable by men below.⁶⁰ Those who have composed elaborate descriptions of the earth have given an account of its various regions so far as this was possible to man; but, being unable to speak of that which is beyond, because Of the impossibility of personal observation, they have assigned as the cause the existence of tides; and that one sea is filled with weed, and another with mud; and that some localities are burnt up with heat, and others cold and frozen. We, however, have learned things which were unknown to us, through the teaching of the prophets, who, being fully persuaded that the heavenly spirit⁶¹ along with the soul will acquire a clothing of mortality, foretold things which other minds were unacquainted with. But it is possible for every one who is naked to obtain this apparel, and to return to its ancient kindred.

Chapter XXI.-Doctrines of the Christians and Greeks Respecting God Compared.

We do not act as fools, O Greeks, nor utter idle tales, when we announce that God was born in the form of a man. I call on you who reproach us to compare your mythical accounts with our narrations. Athene, as they say, took the form of Deiphobus for the sake of Hector,⁶² and the unshorn Phoebus for the sake of Admetus fed the trailing-footed oxen, and the spouse us came as an old woman to Semele. But, while you treat seriously such things, how can you deride us? Your Asclepios died, and he who ravished fifty virgins in one night at Thespieae lost his life by delivering himself to the devouring flame. Prometheus, fastened to Caucasus, suffered punishment for his good deeds to men. According to you, Zeus is envious, and hides the dream⁶³ from men, wishing their destruction. Wherefore, looking at your own memorials, vouchsafe us your approval, though it were only as dealing in legends similar to your own. We, however, do not deal in folly, but your legends are only idle tales. If you speak of the origin of the gods, you also declare them to be mortal. For what reason is Hera now never pregnant? Has she grown old? or is there no one to

give you information? Believe me now, O Greeks, and do not resolve your myths and gods into allegory. If you attempt to do this, the divine nature as held by you is overthrown by your own selves; for, if the demons with you are such as they are said to be, they are worthless as to character; or, if regarded as symbols of the powers of nature, they are not what they are called. But I cannot be persuaded to pay religious homage to the natural elements, nor can I undertake to persuade my neighbour. And Metrodorus of Lampsacus, in his treatise concerning Homer, has argued very foolishly, turning everything into allegory. For he says that neither Hera, nor Athene, nor Zeus are what those persons suppose who consecrate to them sacred enclosures and groves, but parts of nature and certain arrangements of the elements. Hector also, and Achilles, and Agamemnon, and all the Greeks in general, and the Barbarians with Helen and Paris, being of the same nature, you will of course say are introduced merely for the sake of the machinery⁶⁴ of the poem, not one of these personages having really existed. But these things we have put forth only for argument's sake; for it is not allowable even to compare our notion of God with those who are wallowing in matter and mud.

Chapter XXII.-Ridicule of the Solemnities of the Greeks. And of what sort are your teachings? Who must not treat with contempt your solemn festivals, which, being held in honour of wicked demons, cover men with infamy? I have often seen a man⁶⁵ -and have been amazed to see, and the amazement has ended in contempt, to think how he is one thing internally, but outwardly counterfeits what he is not-giving himself excessive airs of daintiness and indulging in all sorts of effeminacy; sometimes darting his eyes about; sometimes throwing his hands hither and thither, and raving with his face smeared with mud; sometimes personating Aphrodité, sometimes Apollo; a solitary accuser of all the gods, an epitome of superstition, a vituperator of heroic deeds, an actor of murders, a chronicler of adultery, a storehouse of madness, a teacher of cynaedi, an instigator of capital sentences;-and yet such a man is praised by all. But I have rejected all his falsehoods, his impiety, his practices,-in short, the man altogether. But you are led captive by such men, while you revile those who do not take a part in your pursuits. I have no mind to stand agape at a number of singers, nor do I desire to be affected in sympathy with a man when he is winking and gesticulating in an unnatural manner. What wonderful or extraordinary thing is performed among you? They utter ribaldry in affected tones, and go through indecent movements; your daughters and your sons behold them giving lessons in adultery on the stage. Admirable places, forsooth, are your lecture-rooms, where every base action perpetrated by night is proclaimed aloud, and the hearers are regaled with the utterance of infamous discourses! Admirable, too, are your mendacious poets, who by their fictions beguile their hearers from the truth!

Chapter XXIII.-Of the Pugilists and Gladiators,

I have seen men weighed down by bodily exercise, and carrying about the burden of their flesh, before whom rewards and chaplets are set, while the adjudicators cheer them on, not to deeds of virtue, but to rivalry in violence and discord; and he who excels in giving blows is crowned. These are the lesser evils; as for the greater, who would not shrink from telling them? Some, giving themselves up to idleness for the sake of profligacy, sell themselves to be killed; and the indigent barter himself away, while the rich man buys others to kill him. And for these the witnesses take their seats, and the boxers meet in single combat, for no reason whatever, nor does any one come down into the arena to succour. Do such exhibitions as these redound to your credit? He who is chief among you collects a legion of blood-stained murderers, engaging to maintain them; and

these ruffians are sent forth by him, and you assemble at the spectacle to be judges, partly of the wickedness of the adjudicator, and partly of that of the men who engage in the combat. And he who misses the murderous exhibition is grieved, because he was not doomed to be a spectator of wicked and impious and abominable deeds. You slaughter animals for the purpose of eating their flesh, and you purchase men to supply a cannibal banquet for the soul, nourishing it by the most impious bloodshedding. The robber commits murder for the sake of plunder, but the rich man purchases gladiators for the sake of their being killed.⁶⁶ Chapter XXIV.-Of the Other Public Amusements.

What advantage should I gain from him who is brought on the stage by Euripides raving mad, and acting the matricide of Alcmaeon; who does not even retain his natural behaviour, but with his mouth wide open goes about sword in hand, and, screaming aloud, is burned to death, habited in a robe unfit for man? Away, too, with the mythical tales of Acusilaus, and Menander, a versifier of the same class! And why should I admire the mythic piper? Why should I busy myself about the Theban Antigenides,⁶⁷ like Aristoxenus? We leave you to these worthless things; and do you either believe our doctrines, or, like us, give up yours.

Chapter XXV.-Boastings and Quarrels of the Philosophers.

What great and wonderful things have your philosophers effected? They leave uncovered one of their shoulders; they let their hair grow long; they cultivate their beards; their nails are like the claws of wild beasts. Though they say that they want nothing, yet, like Proteus,⁶⁸ they need a currier for their wallet, and a weaver for their mantle, and a wood-cutter for their staff, and the rich,⁶⁹ and a cook also for their gluttony. O man competing with the dog,⁷⁰ you know not God, and so have turned to the imitation of an irrational animal. You cry out in public with an assumption of authority, and take upon you to avenge your own self; and if you receive nothing, you indulge in abuse, and philosophy is with you the art of getting money. You follow the doctrines of Plato, and a disciple of Epicurus lifts up his voice to oppose you. Again, you wish to be a disciple of Aristotle, and a follower of Democritus rails at you. Pythagoras says that he was Euphorbus, and he is the heir of the doctrine of Pherecydes; but Aristotle impugns the immortality of the soul. You who receive from your predecessors doctrines which clash with one another, you the inharmonious, are fighting against the harmonious. One of you asserts that God is body, but I assert that He is without body; that the world is indestructible, but I say that it is to be destroyed; that a conflagration will take place at various times, but I say that it will come to pass once for all; that Minos and Rhadamanthus are judges, but I say that God Himself is Judge; that the soul alone is endowed with immortality, but I say that the flesh also is endowed with it.⁷¹ What injury do we inflict upon you, O Greeks? Why do you hate those who follow the word of God, as if they were the vilest of mankind? It is not we who eat human flesh⁷² -they among you who assert such a thing have been suborned as false witnesses; it is among you that Pelops is made a supper for the gods, although beloved by Poseidon, and Kronos devours his children, and Zeus swallows Metis.

Chapter XXVI.-Ridicule of the Studies of the Greeks.

Cease to make a parade of sayings which you have derived from others, and to deck yourselves like the daw in borrowed plumes. If each state were to take away its contribution to your speech, your fallacies would lose their power. While inquiring what God is, you are ignorant of what is in yourselves; and, while staring all agape at the sky, you stumble into pitfalls. The reading of your

books is like walking through a labyrinth, and their readers resemble the cask of the Danaids. Why do you divide time, saying that one part is past, and another present, and another future? For how can the future be passing when the present exists? As those who are sailing imagine in their ignorance, as the ship is borne along, that the hills are in motion, so you do not know that it is you who are passing along, but that time (ο9 ai0w/n) remains present as long as the Creator wills it to exist. Why am I called to account for uttering my opinions, and why are you in such haste to put them all down? Were not you born in the same manner as ourselves, and placed under the same government of the world? Why say that wisdom is with you alone, who have not another sun, nor other risings of the stars, nor a more distinguished origin, nor a death preferable to that of other men? The grammarians have been the beginning of this idle talk; and you who parcel out wisdom are cut off from the wisdom that is according to truth, and assign the names of the several parts to particular men; and you know not God, but in your fierce contentions destroy one another. And on this account you are all nothing worth. While you arrogate to yourselves the sole right of discussion, you discourse like the blind man with the deaf. Why do you handle the builder's tools without knowing how to build? Why do you busy yourselves with words, while you keep aloof from deeds, puffed up with praise, but cast down by misfortunes? Your modes of acting are contrary to reaSon, for you make a pompons appearance in public, but hide your teaching in corners. Finding you to be such men as these, we have abandoned you, and no longer concern ourselves with your tenets, but follow the word of God. Why, O man, do you set the letters of the alphabet at war with one another? Why do you, as in a boxing match, make their sounds clash together with your mincing Attic way of speaking, whereas you ought to speak more according to nature? For if you adopt the Attic dialect though not an Athenian, pray why do you not speak like the Dorians? How is it that one appears to you more rugged, the other more pleasant for intercourse?

Chapter XXVII.-The Christians are Hated Unjustly. And if you adhere to their teaching, why do you fight against me for choosing such views of doctrine as I approve? Is it not unreasonable that, while the robber is not to be punished for the name he bears,⁷³ but only when the truth about him has been clearly ascertained, yet we are to be assailed with abuse on a judgment formed without examination? Diagoras was an Athenian, but you punished him for divulging the Athenian mysteries; yet you who read his Phrygian discourses hate us. You possess the commentaries of Leo, and are displeased with our refutations of them; and having in your hands the opinions of Apion concerning the Egyptian gods, you denounce us as most impious. The tomb of Olympian Zeus is shown among you,⁷⁴ though some one says that the Cretans are liars.⁷⁵ Your assembly of many gods is nothing. Though their despiser Epicurus acts as a torch-bearer,⁷⁶ I do not any the more conceal from the rulers that view of God which I hold in relation to His government of the universe. Why do you advise me to be false to my principles? Why do you who say that you despise death exhort us to use art in order to escape it? I have not the heart of a deer; but your zeal for dialectics resembles the loquacity of Thersites. How can I believe one who tells me that the sun is a red-hot mass and the moon an earth? Such assertions are mere logomachies, and not a sober exposition of truth. How can it be otherwise than foolish to credit the books of Herodotus relating to the history of Hercules, which tell of an upper earth from which the lion came down that was killed by Hercules? And what avails the Attic style, the sorites of philosophers, the plausibilities of syllogisms, the measurements of the earth, the positions of the stars, and the course of the sun? To be occupied in such inquiries is the work of one who imposes opinions on himself as if they were laws.

Chapter XXVIII.-Condemnation of the Greek Legislation. On this account I reject your legislation also; for there ought to be one common polity for all; but now there are as many different codes as there are states, so that things held disgraceful in some are honourable in others. The Greeks consider intercourse with a mother as unlawful, but this practice is esteemed most becoming by the Persian Magi; paederasty is condemned by the Barbarians, but by the Romans, who endeavour to collect herds of boys like grazing horses, it is honoured with certain privileges.

Chapter XXIX.-Account of Tatian's Conversion.

Wherefore, having seen these things, and moreover also having been admitted to the mysteries, and having everywhere examined the religious rites performed by the effeminate and the pathic, and having found among the Romans their Latiarian Jupiter delighting in human gore and the blood of slaughtered men, and Artemis not far from the great city⁷⁷ sanctioning acts of the same kind, and one demon here and another there instigating to the perpetration of evil,-retiring by myself, I sought how I might be able to discover the truth. And, while I was giving my most earnest attention to the matter, I happened to meet with certain barbaric writings, too old to be compared with the opinions of the Greeks, and too divine to be compared with their errors; and I was led to put faith in these by the unpretending east of the language, the inartificial character of the writers, the foreknowledge displayed of future events, the excellent quality of the precepts, and the declaration of the government of the universe as centred in one Being.⁷⁸ And, my soul being taught of God, I discern that the former class of writings lead to condemnation, but that these put an end to the slavery that is in the world, and rescue us from a multiplicity of rulers and ten thousand tyrants, while they give us, not indeed what we had not before received, but what we had received but were prevented by error from retaining.

Chapter XXX.-How He Resolved to Resist the Devil.

Therefore, being initiated and instructed in these things, I wish to put away my former errors as the follies of childhood. For we know that the nature of wickedness is like that of the smallest seeds; since it has waxed strong from a small beginning, but will again be destroyed if we obey the words of God and do not scatter ourselves. For He has become master of all we have by means of a certain "hidden treasure,"⁷⁹ which while we are digging for we are indeed covered with dust, but we secure it as our fixed possession. He who receives the whole of this treasure has obtained command of the most precious wealth. Let these things, then, be said to our friends. But to you Greeks what can I say, except to request you not to rail at those who are better than yourselves, nor if they are called Barbarians to make that an occasion of banter? For, if you are willing, you will be able to find out the cause of mews not being able to understand one another's language; for to those who wish to examine our principles I will give a simple and copious account of them.

Chapter XXXI.-The Philosophy of the Christians More Ancient Than that of the Greeks. But now it seems proper for me to demonstrate that our philosophy is older than the systems of the Greeks. Moses and Homer shall be our limits, each of them being of great antiquity; the one being the oldest of poets and historians, and the other the founder of all barbarian wisdom. Let us, then, institute a comparison between them; and we shall find that our doctrines are older, not only than those of the Greeks, but than the invention of letters.⁸⁰ And I will not bring forward witnesses from among ourselves, but rather have recourse to Greeks. To do the former would be foolish, because it would not be allowed by you; but the other will surprise you, when, by contending against you

with your own weapons, I adduce arguments of which you had no suspicion. Now the poetry of Homer, his parentage, and the time in which he flourished have been investigated by the most ancient writers,-by Theagenes of Rhegium, who lived in the time of Cambyses, Stesimbrotus of Thasos and Antimachus of Colophon, Herodotus of Halicarnassus, and Dionysius the Olynthian; after them, by Ephorus of Cumae, and Philochorus the Athenian, Megaclides and Chamaeleon the Peripatetics; afterwards by the grammarians, Zenodotus, Aristophanes, Callimachus, Crates, Eratosthenes, Aristarchus, and Apollodorus. Of these, Crates says that he flourished before the return of the Heraclidae, and within 80 years after the Trojan war; Eratosthenes says that it was after the 100th year from the taking of Ilium; Aristarchus, that it was about the time of the Ionian migration, which was 140 years after that event; but, according to Philochorus, after the Ionian migration, in the archonship of Archippus at Athens, 180 years after the Trojan war; Apollodorus says it was 100 years after the Ionian migration, which would be 240 years after the Trojan war. Some say that he lived 90 years before the Olympiads, which would be 317 years after the taking of Troy. Others carry it down to a later date, and say that Homer was a contemporary of Archilochus ; but Archilochus flourished about the 23d Olympiad, in the time of Gyges the Lydian, 500 years after Troy. Thus, concerning the age of the aforesaid poet, I mean Homer, and the discrepancies of those who have spoken of him, we have said enough in a summary manner for those who are able to investigate with accuracy. For it is possible to show that the opinions held about the facts themselves also are false. For, where the assigned dates do not agree together, it is impossible that the history should be true. For what is the cause of error in writing, but the narrating of things that are not true?

Chapter XXXII.-The Doctrine of the Christians, is Opposed to Dissensions, and Fitted for All. But with us there is no desire of vainglory, nor do we indulge in a variety of opinions. For having renounced the popular and earthly, and obeying the commands of God, and following the law of the Father of immortality, we reject everything which rests upon human opinion. Not only do the rich among us pursue our philosophy, but the poor enjoy instruction gratuitously;⁸¹ for the things which come from God surpass the requital of worldly gifts. Thus we admit all who desire to hear, even old women and striplings; and, in short, persons of every age are treated by us with respect, but every kind of licentiousness is kept at a distance. And in speaking we do not utter falsehood. It would be an excellent thing if your continuance in unbelief should receive a check; but, however that may be, let our cause remain confirmed by the judgment pronounced by God. Laugh, if you please; but you will have to weep hereafter. Is it not absurd that Nestor,⁸² who was slow at cutting his horses' reins owing to his weak and sluggish old age, is, according to you, to be admired for attempting to rival the young men in fighting, while you deride those among us who struggle against old age and occupy themselves with the things pertaining to God? Who would not laugh when you tell us that the Amazons, and Semiramis, and certain other warlike women existed, while you cast reproaches on our maidens? Achilles was a youth, yet is believed to have been very magnanimous; and Neoptolemus was younger, but strong; Philoctetes was weak, but the divinity had need of him against Troy. What sort of man was Thersites? yet he held a command in the army, and, if he had not through doltishness had such an unbridled tongue, he would not have been reproached for being peak-headed and bald. As for those who wish to learn our philosophy, we do not test them by their looks, nor do we judge of those who come to us by their outward appearance; for we argue that there may be strength of mind in all, though they may be weak in body. But your proceedings are full of envy and abundant stupidity.

Chapter XXXIII.-Vindication of Christian Women.

Therefore I have been desirous to prove from the things which are esteemed honourable among you, that our institutions are marked by sober mindedness, but that yours are in close affinity with madness.⁸³ You who say that we talk nonsense among women and boys, among maidens and old women, and scoff at us for not being with you, hear what silliness prevails among the Greeks. For their works of art are devoted to worthless objects, while they are held in higher estimation by you than even your gods; and you behave yourselves unbecomingly in what relates to woman. For Lysippus cast a statue of Praxilla, whose poems contain nothing useful, and Menestratus one of Learchis, and Selanion one of Sappho the courtesan, and Naucydes one of Erinna the Lesbian, and Boiscus one of Myrtis, and Cephisodotus one of Myro of Byzantium, and Gomphus one of Praxigoris, and Amphistratus one of Clito. And what shall I say about Anyta, Telesilla, and Mystis? Of the first Euthyocrates and Cephisodotus made a statue, and of the second Niceratus, and of the third Aristodotus; Euthyocrates made one of Mnesiarchis the Ephesian, Selanion one of Corinna, and Euthyocrates one of Thalarchis the Argive. My object in referring to these women is, that you may not regard as something strange what you find among us, and that, comparing the statues which are before your eyes, you may not treat the women with scorn who among us pursue philosophy. This Sappho is a lewd, love-sick female, and sings her own wantonness;⁸⁴ but all our women are chaste, and the maidens at their distaffs sing of divine things⁸⁵ more nobly than that damsel of yours. Wherefore be ashamed, you who are professed disciples of women yet scoff at those of the sex who hold our doctrine, as well as at the solemn assemblies they frequent.⁸⁶ What a noble infant did Glaucippe present to you, who brought forth a prodigy, as is shown by her statue cast by Niceratus, the son of Euctemon the Athenian! But, if Glaucippe brought forth an elephant, was that a reason why she should enjoy public honours? Praxiteles and Herodotus made for you Phryne the courtesan, and Euthyocrates cast a brazen statue of Panteuchis, who was pregnant by a whoremonger; and Dinomenes, because Besantis queen of the Paeonians gave birth to a black infant, took pains to preserve her memory by his art. I condemn Pythagoras too, who made a figure of Europa on the bull; and you also, who honour the accuser of Zeus on account of his artistic skill. And I ridicule the skill of Myron, who made a heifer and upon it a Victory because by carrying off the daughter of Agenor it had borne away the prize for adultery and lewdness. The Olynthian Herodotus made statues of Glycera the courtesan and Argeia the harper. Bryaxis made a statue of Pasiphae; and, by having a memorial of her lewdness, it seems to have been almost your desire that the women of the present time should be like her.⁸⁷ A certain Melanippe was a wise woman, and for that reason Lysistratus made her statue. But, forsooth, you will not believe that among us there are wise women!

Chapter XXXIV.-Ridicule of the Statues Erected by the Greeks.

Worthy of very great honour, certainly, was the tyrant Bhalaris, who devoured sucklings, and accordingly is exhibited by the workmanship of Polystratus the Ambraciot, even to this day, as a very wonderful man! The Agrigentines dreaded to look on that countenance of his, because of his cannibalism; but people of culture now make it their boast that they behold him in his statue! Is it not shameful that fratricide is honoured by you who look on the statues of Polynices and Eteocles, and that you have not rather buried them with their maker Pythagoras? Destroy these memorials of iniquity! Why should I contemplate with admiration the figure of the woman who bore thirty children, merely for the sake of the artist Periclymenus? One ought to turn away with disgust from

one who bore off the fruits of great incontinence, and whom the Romans compared to a sow, which also on a like account, they say, was deemed worthy of a mystic worship. Arês committed adultery with Aphrodité, and Andron made an image of their offspring Harmonia. Sophron, who committed to writing trifles and absurdities, was more celebrated for his skill in casting metals, of which specimens exist even now. And not only have his tales kept the fabulist Aesop in everlasting remembrance, but also the plastic art of Aristodemus has increased his celebrity. How is it then that you, who have so many poetesses whose productions are mere trash, and innumerable courtezans, and worthless men, are not ashamed to slander the reputation of our women? What care I to know that Euanthe gave birth to an infant in the Peripatus, or to gape with wonder at the art of Callistratus, or to fix my gaze on the Neaera of Calliades? For she was a courtezan. Laïs was a prostitute, and Turnus made her a monument of prostitution. Why are you not ashamed of the fornication of Hephaestion, even though Philo has represented him very artistically? And for what reason do you honour the hermaphrodite Ganymede by Leochares, as if you possessed something admirable? Praxiteles even made a statue of a woman with the stain of impurity upon it. It behoved you, repudiating everything of this kind, to seek what is truly worthy of attention, and not to turn with disgust from our mode of life while receiving with approval the shameful productions of Philaenis and Elephantis.

Chapter XXXV.-Tatian Speaks as an Eye-Witness. The things which I have thus set before you I have not learned at second hand. I have visited many lands; I have followed rhetoric, like yourselves; I have fallen in with many arts and inventions; and finally, when sojourning in the city of the Romans, I inspected the multiplicity of statues brought thither by you: for I do not attempt, as is the custom with many, to strengthen my own views by the opinions of others, but I wish to give you a distinct account of what I myself have seen and felt. So, bidding farewell to the arrogance of Romans and the idle talk of Athenians, and all their ill-connected opinions, I embraced our barbaric philosophy. I began to show how this was more ancient than your institutions,⁸⁸ but left my task unfinished, in order to discuss a matter which demanded more immediate attention; but now it is time I should attempt to speak concerning its doctrines. Be not offended with our teaching, nor undertake an elaborate reply filled with trifling and ribaldry, saying, "Tatian, aspiring to be above the Greeks, above the infinite number of philosophic inquirers, has struck out a new path, and embraced the doctrines of Barbarians." For what grievance is it, that men manifestly ignorant should be reasoned with by a man of like nature with themselves? Or how can it be irrational, according to your own sophist,⁸⁹ to grow old always learning something?

Chapter XXXVI.-Testimony of the Chaldeans to the Antiquity of Moses. But let Homer be not later than the Trojan war; let it be granted that he was contemporary with it, or even that he was in the army of Agamemnon, and, if any so please, that he lived before the invention of letters. The Moses before mentioned will be shown to have been many years older than the taking of Troy, and far more ancient than the building of Troy, or than Tros and Dardanus. To demonstrate this I will call in as witnesses the Chaldeans, the Phoenicians and the Egyptians. And what more need I say? For it behoves one who professes to persuade his hearers to make his narrative of events very concise. Berosus, a Babylonian, a priest of their god Belus, born in the time of Alexander, composed for Antiochus, the third after him, the history of the Chaldeans in three books; and, narrating the acts of the kings, he mentions one of them, Nabuchodonosor by name, who made war against the Phoenicians and the Jews,-events which we know were announced by our

prophets, and which happened much later than the age of Moses, seventy years before the Persian empire. But Berosus is a very trustworthy man, and of this Juba is a witness, who, writing concerning the Assyrians, says that he learned the history from Berosus: there are two books of his concerning the Assyrians.

Chapter XXXVII.-Testimony of the Phoenicians.

After the Chaldeans, the testimony of the Phoenicians is as follows. There were among them three men, Theodotus, Hypsicrates, and Mochus; Chaitus translated their books into Greek, and also composed with exactness the lives of the philosophers. Now, in the histories of the aforesaid writers it is shown that the abduction of Europa happened under one of the kings, and an account is given of the coming of Menelaus into Phoenicia, and of the matters relating to Chiramus,⁹⁰ who gave his daughter in marriage to Solomon the king of the Jews, and supplied wood of all kind of trees for the building of the temple. Menander of Pergamus composed a history concerning the same things. But the age of Chiramus is somewhere about the Trojan war; but Solomon, the contemporary of Chiramus, lived much later than the age of Moses.

Chapter XXXVIII.-The Egyptians Place Moses in the Reign of Inachus. Of the Egyptians also there are accurate chronicles. Ptolemy, not the king, but a priest of Mendes, is the interpreter of their affairs. This writer, narrating the acts of the kings, says that the departure of the Jews from Egypt to the places whither they went occurred in the time of king Amosis, under the leadership of Moses. He thus speaks: "Amosis lived in the time of king Inachus." After him, Apion the grammarian, a man most highly esteemed, in the fourth book of his *Aegyptiaca* (there are five books of his), besides many other things, says that Amosis destroyed Avaris in the time of the Argive Inachus, as the Mendesian Ptolemy wrote in his annals. But the time from Inachus to the taking of Troy occupies twenty generations. The steps of the demonstration are the following:-

Chapter XXXIX.-Catalogue of the Argive Kings. The kings of the Argives were these: Inachus, Phoroneus, Apis, Criasis, Triopas, Argeius, Phorbas, Crotopas, Sthenelaus, Danaus, Lynceus, Proetus, Abas, Acrisius, Perseus, Sthenelaus, Eurystheus, Atreus, Thyestes, and Agamemnon, in the eighteenth year of whose reign Troy was taken. And every intelligent person will most carefully observe that, according to the tradition of the Greeks, they possessed no historical composition; for Cadmus, who taught them letters, came into Boeotia many generations later. But after Inachus, under Phoroneus, a check was with difficulty given to their savage and nomadic life, and they entered upon a new order of things. Wherefore, if Moses is shown to be contemporary with Inachus, he is four hundred years older than the Trojan war. But this is demonstrated from the succession of the Attic, [and of the Macedonian, the Ptolemaic, and the Antiochian]⁹¹ kings. Hence, if the most illustrious deeds among the Greeks were recorded and made known after Inachus, it is manifest that this must have been after Moses. In the time of Phoroneus, who was after Inachus, Ogygus is mentioned among the Athenians, in whose time was the first deluge; and in the time of Phorbas was Actaeus, from whom Attica was called Actaea; and in the time of Triopas were Prometheus, and Epimetheus, and Arias, and Cecrops of double nature, and Io; in the time of Crotopas was the burning of Phaëthon and the flood of Deucalion; in the time of Sthenelus was the reign of Amphictyon and the coming of Danaus into Peloponnesus, and the founding of Dardania by Dardanus, and the return of Europa from phoenicia to Crete; in the time of Lynceus was the abduction of Koré, and the founding of the temple in Eleusis, and the husbandry of Triptolemus, and the coming of Cadmus to Thebes, and the reign of Minos; in the time of

Proetus was the war of Eumolpus against the Athenians; in the time of Acrisius was the coming over of Pelops from Phrygia, and the coming of Ion to Athens, and the second Cecrops, and the deeds of Perseus and Dionysus, and Musaeus, the disciple of Orpheus; and in the reign of Agamemnon Troy was taken.

Chapter XL.-Moses More Ancient and Credible Than the Heathen Heroes.

Therefore, from what has been said it is evident that Moses was older than the ancient heroes, wars, and demons. And we ought rather to believe him, who stands before them in point of age, than the Greeks, who, without being aware of it,⁹² drew his doctrines [as] from a fountain. For many of the sophists among them, stimulated by curiosity, endeavoured to adulterate whatever they learned from Moses,⁹³ and from those who have philosophized like him, first that they might be considered as having something of their own, and secondly, that covering up by a certain rhetorical artifice whatever things they did not understand, they might misrepresent the truth as if it were a fable. But what the learned among the Greeks have said concerning our polity and the history of our laws, and how many and what kind of men have written of these things, will be shown in the treatise against those who have discoursed of divine things.⁹⁴]

Chapter XLI. But the matter of principal importance is to endeavour with all accuracy to make it clear that Moses is not only older than Homer, but than all the writers that were before him-older than Linus, Philammon, Thamyris, Amphion, Musaeus, Orpheus, Demodocus, Phemius, Sibylla, Epimenides of Crete, who came to Sparta, Aristaeus of Proconnesus, who wrote the Arimaspia, Asbolus the Centaur, Isatis, Drymon, Euclus the Cyprian, Horus the Samian, and Pronapis the Athenian. Now, Linus was the teacher of Hercules, but Hercules preceded the Trojan war by one generation; and this is manifest from his son Tlepolemus, who served in the army against Troy. And Orpheus lived at the same time as Hercules; moreover, it is said that all the works attributed to him were composed by Onomacritus the Athenian, who lived during the reign of the Pisistratids, about the fiftieth Olympiad. Musaeus was a disciple of Orpheus. Amphion, since he preceded the siege of Troy by two generations, forbids our collecting further particulars about him for those who are desirous of information. Demodocus and Phemius lived at the very time of the Trojan war; for the one resided with the suitors, and the other with the Phaeacians. Thamyris and Philammon were not much earlier than these. Thus, concerning their several performances in each kind, and their times and the record of them, we have written very fully, and, as I think, with all exactness. But, that we may complete what is still wanting, I will give my explanation respecting the men who are esteemed wise. Minos, who has been thought to excel in every kind of wisdom, and mental acuteness, and legislative capacity, lived in the time of Lynceus, who reigned after Danaus in the eleventh generation after Inachus. Lycurgus, who was born long after the taking of Troy, gave laws to the Lacedemonians. Draco is found to have lived about the thirty-ninth Olympiad, Solon about the forty-sixth, and Pythagoras about the sixty-second. We have shown that the Olympiads commenced 407 years after the taking of Troy. These facts being demonstrated, we shall briefly remark concerning the age of the seven wise men. The oldest of these, Thales, lived about the fiftieth Olympiad; and I have already spoken briefly of those who came after him.

Chapter XLII.-Concluding Statement as to the Author.

These things, O Greeks, I Tatian, a disciple of the barbarian philosophy,⁹⁵ have composed for you. I was born in the land of the Assyrians, having been first instructed in your doctrines, and

afterwards in those which I now undertake to proclaim. Henceforward, knowing who God is and what is His work, I present myself to you prepared for an examination⁹⁶ concerning my doctrines, while I adhere immoveably to that mode of life which is according to God.⁹⁷

Fragments.⁹⁸ In his treatise, Concerning Perfection according to the Saviour, he writes, "Consent indeed fits for prayer, but fellowship in corruption weakens supplication. At any rate, by the permission he certainly, though delicately, forbids; for while he permits them to return to the same on account of Satan and incontinence, he exhibits a man who will attempt to serve two masters-God by the 'consent' (1 Corinthians 7:5), but by want of consent, incontinence, fornication, and the devil."-Clem. Alex: Strom., iii. c. 12 A certain person inveighs against generation, calling it corruptible and destructive; and some one does violence [to Scripture], applying to pro-creation the Saviour's words, "Lay not up treasure on earth, where moth and rust corrupt; "and he is not ashamed to add to these the words of the prophet: "You all shall grow old as a garment, and the moth shall devour you."

And, in like manner, they adduce the saying concerning the resurrection of the dead, "The sons of that world neither marry nor are given in marriage."-Clem. Alex.: iii. c. 12,

Tatian, who maintaining the imaginary flesh of Christ, pronounces all sexual connection impure, who was also the very violent heresiarch of the Encratites, employs an argument of this sort: "If any one sows to the flesh, of the flesh he shall reap corruption; "but he sows to the flesh who is joined to a woman; therefore he who takes a wife and sows in the flesh, of the flesh he shall reap corruption.-Hieron.: Com. in Ep. ad Gal..

Seceding from the Church, and being elated and puffed up by a conceit of his teacher,⁹⁹ as if he were superior to the rest, he formed his own peculiar type of doctrine. Imagining certain invisible Aeons like those of Valentinus, and denouncing marriage as defilement and fornication in the same way as Marcion and Saturninus, and denying the salvation of Adam as an opinion of his own.-Irenaeus: Adv. Hoer., i. 28.

Tatian attempting from time to time to make use of Paul's language, that in Adam all die, but ignoring that "where sin abounded, grace has much more abounded."-Irenaeus: Adv. Heres., iii. 37

Against Tatian, who says that the words, "Let there be light," are to be taken as a prayer. If He who uttered it knew a superior God, how is it that He says, "I am God, and there is none beside me"?

He said that there are punishments for blasphemies, foolish talking, and licentious words, which are punished and chastised by the Logos. And he said that women were punished on account of their hair and ornaments by a power placed over those things, which also gave strength to Samson by his hair, and punishes those who by the ornament of their hair are urged on to fornication.-Clem. Alex.: Frag. But Tatian, not understanding that the expression "Let there be" is not always precative but sometimes imperative, most impiously imagined concerning God, who said "Let there be light," that He prayed rather than commanded light to be, as if, as he impiously thought, God was in darkness.-Origen: De Orat.

Tatian separates the old man and the new, but not, as we say, understanding the old man to be the law, and the new man to be the Gospel. We agree with him in saying the same thing, but not in

the sense he wishes, abrogating the law as if it belonged to another God.-Clem. Alex.: Strom., iii. 12.

Tatian condemns and rejects not only marriage, but also meats which God has created for use.-Hieron.: Adv. Jovin., i. 3.

"But ye gave the Nazarites wine to drink, and commanded the prophets, saying, Prophecy not." On this, perhaps, Tatian the chief of the Encratites endeavours to build his heresy, asserting that wine is not to be drunk, since it was commanded in the law that the Nazarites were not to drink wine, and now those who give the Nazarites wine are accused by the prophet.-Hieron.: Com. in Amos.

Tatian, the patriarch of the Encratites, who himself rejected some of Paul's Epistles, believed this especially, that is [addressed] to Tires, ought to be declared to be the apostle's, thinking little of the assertion of Marcion and others, who agree with him on this point.-Hieron.: Proef. in Com. ad Tit.

[Archelaus (a.d. 280), Bishop of Carrha in Mesopotamia, classes his countryman Tatian with "Marcion, Sabellius, and others who have made up for themselves a peculiar science," i.e., a theology of their own.-Routh: Reliquiae, tom. v. p. 137. But see Edinburgh Series of this work, vol. xx. p. 267.] 1: e0pistolaj sunta/ttein , i.e., for transmission by letter-carriers.-Otto.

2: Aristoph., Ranae , 92, 93.

3: peri\ fu/sewj 4: He was called d skoteino/j for his obscurity.

5: [Dear Christians of those times; so Justin and all the rest appeal against this odium. Their name an offence, "cast out as evil," but fragrant with unrequited love. Matt. x. 22-39.]

6: [1 Pet. ii. 17. This claim for man as man is the inspiration of Christianity. Terence breathes it from his wounded soul in slavery; and his immortal line, "Homo sum: humani nihil a me alienum puto" (Haeuntontimor. , act. i. sc. 1, verse 25), looks as if it had been written in the second century of illumination.] 7: [Kaye's Justin , pp. 56, 158.]

8: John iv. 24.

9: [Over again Tatian asserts spirits to be material , though not fleshly ; and I think with reference to 1 Cor. xv. 44.]

10: Rom. i. 20.

11: [Over again Tatian asserts spirits to be material , though not fleshly ; and I think with reference to 1 Cor. xv. 44.] 12: [See Kaye's Justin Martyr , p. 161, note; and observe his stricture on Bull and Waterland.]

13: kata\ merismo/n . Some translate, "by division," but the above is preferable. The sense, according to Otto, is that the Logos, having received a peculiar nature, shares in the rational power of the Father as a lighted torch partakes of the light of the torch from which it is kindled. Comp. Just. Mar., Dial. c. T. , chap. lxi.

14: oi0konomi/aj th\n ai@resin proslabo/n . The above seems the simplest rendering of this difficult passage, but several others have been proposed. [See note 4, cap. ix., infra , p. 69.]

15: [Matter not eternal. He seems to have understood Gen. i. 1, of the creation of matter; and verse 2, as beginning the history of our planet and the visible universe.]

16: [Supposed to be a personal reference to his conversion and baptism. As to " confused matter," it should be kindred matter, and must be set over " kindred spirit. " See p. 71, cap. xiii., infra.] 17: [Comp. cap. xvii., infra , note 5, p. 72. e0n h9me/ra suntelei/aj .]

18: [A supposed discovery of modern science. See Religion and Chemistry , by Professor Cook of Harvard, pp. 79, 101. Revised Edition, Scribners, 1880.] 19: [Kaye's rendering of this passage should be compared. See his Justin , p. 182.] 20: Gen. iii. 1 [First-born. a!ggeloj prwto/gonoj .] 21: Il ., i. 599; Od. , viii. 326.

22: On fleeing from Apollo, she became a bay-tree.

23: It is uncertain from whom this line is quoted.

24: Comp. ch. viii. init.

25: The signs of the Zodiac (Gesner).

26: Literally, "Tell me by God," or, "in the name of God."

27: The Deltotum was a star of the shape of a triangle.-Otto.

28: [oi0ko/nomoj . So cap. xii., infra: "the constitution of the body is under one management , " mia=j e0sti\n oi0konomi9aj . Also cap. xxi., p. 74, infra , note 5.]

29: [He uses the verb qeologe=i=n as = qeopoiei=i=n ; but Kaye directs attention to Justin's use of the same as = to discourse on divine things , and again in calling Christ God .]

30: Hercules-a sign in the sky. Leaning on his right knee, he tries to crush with his left foot the right side of the dragon's head.

31: A writer of mimes.

32: Or, reading with Maranus, ka@n ... gen ., "even though," etc.

33: [Think of a Chaldean heathen, by the power of grace, thus transformed. Sapiens solus liber , but the Christian alone is wise . This chapter compares favourably with the eloquence of Chrysostom in his letter to Cyriac, which, if spurious, is made up of passages to be found elsewhere in his works. Tom. iii. p. 683. Ed. Migne, Paris, 1859.] 34: [Comp. cap. xv., infra, and the note 6, p. 71.] 35: [See cap. xv., infra.] 36: Literally, "brought forth" or "forward." The word does not imply that matter was created by God.

37: Tatian's words are somewhat obscure. We have given substantially the opinion of Worth, as expressed in his translation. The sense is: The body is evidently a unity in its organization and its activity, and the ultimate end which is serves in creation is that with which it is occupied, yet there are differences in respect of the parts. Otto renders: " For as the constitution of the body is of one plan, and in reference to the body the cause of its origin is occupied."

38: [Demons. The Paris editors have a note here, bidding us to read with caution; as our author seems rashly to imagine the demons to be material creatures. p. 151, ed. 1615.] 39: ["Which,

though one and the same, is thus variously modified."Kaye's rendering in his Justin , p. 184.]

40: [Here Bishop Kaye has a very full note, quoting a beautiful passage textually from Beausobre, with whom, however, he does not entirely coincide. Justin , p. 184.]

41: John. i. 5.

42: [See cap. v., note, supra, p. 67.]

43: [tou= peponqo/toj Qeou= . A very noteworthy testimony to the mystery of the Cross, and an early specimen of the Communicatio idiomatum: the a0nti\dosij or a0ntimeta/stasij of the Greek theologians. Pearson, On the Creed , p. 314. London, 1824.]

44: [The shortening of human life is a gracious limitation of transgression and of the peril of probation. "Let not our years be multiplied to increase our guilt."] 45: [desmo\j de\ tou= sarko\j yuxh\ .] 46: Comp. 1 Cor. ii. 14,15. [The 71 , of whom we are to hear so much in Tertullian. Comp. cap. xii., supra, p. 70.] 47: [But Kaye would translate, "by dying to the world through faith."] 48: Ps. viii. 5.

49: [For a learned and valuable comparison of early patristic Demonologies , see Kaye's Justin Martyr , pp. 201-210.] 50: Perhaps in his treatise "On Animals."

51: Comp. Eph. vi. 13, 14, 17.

52: Democritus. [The Paris editors add, vide Laertium. As to Ostanes , see that invaluable thesaurus, Hofmann's Lex. Universale , vol. ii. p. 6. Leyden, 1698.] 53: [Comp. cap. vi. note 6, supra . p. 67.]

54: [Naviget Anticyras . On hellebore, see otherwise useless learning but illustrative of this place, in Burton, Anat. Melanchol. , p. 400, Ed. New York, 1847.] 55: [u!lhj oi0konomi/a . note Comp. cap. ix., supra , note 4; p. 69.] 56: [The language of an affectionate pupil: o9 qaumasiw/tatoj loustinoj .] 57: Comp. Hom. Il. , ii. 372.

58: [The baptismal renunciation.]

59: John i. 3.

60: [The flavour of this passage comes out with more sweetness in Kaye's note (p. 198, Justin M.), thus: "Above the visible heavens exist the better ages, ai0w=nesnoi0 krei/ttonej , having no change of seasons from which various diseases take their origin; but, blest with a uniform goodness of temperature, they enjoy perpetual day, and light inaccessible to men who dwell here below."

61: [Kaye thus renders this passage: "the spirit together with the soul will receive immortality, the heavenly covering of mortality." Justin, p. 288.] 62: Il. , xxii. 227.

63: Il. , ii. init.

64: [Ca/rin oi0konmi/aj . Compare divers uses of this word in Kaye's Justin , p. 174.]

65: Tatian here describes an actor. [And in America heathenism has returned upon us in most of the indecencies here exposed. Are we Christians?]

66: [Here Christianity began to avenge itself on the brutal spectacles of the Coliseum, which stands a gigantic monument of the religious system of which they were a part. See Athenagoras, Embassy , cap. xxxv.] 67: Antigenides was a flute-player, and Aristoxenus a writer on music and musical instruments.

68: The Cynic Peregrinus is meant.

69: They need the rich to invite them to banquets.

70: The Cynic.

71: [The vigor of this passage, and the impact of its truths upon heathen idols, are noble specimens of our author's power.]

72: They ate and drank bread and wine hallowed to be the koinwni/a of the flesh and blood of Christ (1 Cor. x. 16); but they knew nothing of the modern doctrine of the Latin churches, which is precisely what Tatian denies.] 73: [Athenagoras, Embassy , cap. ii., infra .]

74: In Crete.

75: Comp. Tit. i. 12. Callimachus is probably the author referred to, through others express the same opinion respecting the Cretans.

76: Accommodating himself to the popular opinions, through fear.

77: At Aricia, near Rome.

78: [A memorable tribute to the light-giving power of the Holy Scriptures. "Barbarian books" (barbaric means something else) they were; but well says Dr. Watts in a paraphrase of Ps. cxix. 96 (and comp. capp xl, xli., infra),- 79: Comp. Matt. xiii. 44. [Cogent reasoning with Greeks.] 80: Comp. Matt. xiii. 44. [Cogent reasoning with Greeks.]

81: [Compare cap. xi. p. 69. And note, thus early, the Christian freeschools, such as Julian closed and then imitated, confessing their power.]

82: Il ., ix.

83: [See note 2, next page.]

84: [St. Chrysostom speaks of the heathen as o9i tai=j satanikai=j w\|dai=j katashpo/menoi . In Psalmum , cxvii. tom. v. p. 533. Ed . Migne.]

85: [Such as the Magnificat of the Virgin, the Twenty-third Psalm, or the Christian Hymn for Eventide , which they learned in the Christian schools (cap. xxxii. p. 78). Cold is the heart of any mother's son that does not warm over such a chapter as this on the enfranchisement of womanhood by Christ. Observe our author's scorn for the heathen "affinity with unreason" (this chapter, supra), and then enjoy this glimpse of the contrast afforded by the Gospel in its influence upon women. Intensely should we delight in the pictures of early Christian society, of which the Fathers give us these suggestive outlines. Rejecting the profane and wanton songs they heard around them, "Satanic minstrelsies," as St. Chrysostom names them, they beguiled their toils and soothed their sorrows with "Psalms and hymns and spiritual songs." As St. Jerome relates,

"You could not go into the field, but you might hear the ploughman's hallelujahs, the mower's hymns, and the vine-dresser's chant of the Psalms of David." See Cave's Primitive Christianity , p. 132.]

86: [Such as the Magnificat of the Virgin, the Twenty-third Psalm, or the Christian Hymn for Eventide , which they learned in the Christian schools (cap. xxxii. p. 78). Cold is the heart of any mother's son that does not warm over such a chapter as this on the enfranchisement of womanhood by Christ. Observe our author's scorn for the heathen "affinity with unreason" (this chapter, supra), and then enjoy this glimpse of the contrast afforded by the Gospel in its influence upon women. Intensely should we delight in the pictures of early Christian society, of which the Fathers give us these suggestive outlines. Rejecting the profane and wanton songs they heard around them,-"Satanic minstrelsy," as St. Chrysostom names them,-they beguiled their toils and soothed their sorrows with "Psalms and hymns and spiritual songs." As St. Jerome relates, "You could not go into the field, but you might hear the ploughman's hallelujahs, the mower's hymns, and the vine-dresser's chant of the Psalms of David." See Cave's Primitive Christianity , p. 132.]

87: [St. Paul's spirit was stirred within him, beholding the abominable idolatries of the Athenians; and who can wonder at the loathing of Christians, whose wives and children could not escape from these shameful spectacles. The growing asceticism and fanatical views of sexual relations, which were now rising in the Church, were a morbid but virtuous revolt of faith against these impurities.]

88: Chap. xxxi. [With what clam superiority he professes himself a barbarian! I honour the eye-witness who tells not only what he had seen, but what he felt amid such evidences of man's degradation and impiety.]

89: Solon. Bergh., Poetae Graec. Lyr , fr. 18. [The interest and biographical importance of this chapter must be apparent.] 90: Called Hiram in our authorized translation.

91: The words within brackets, though they occur in the mss. and in Eusebius, are supposed by some scholars to be a very old interpolation.

92: This expression admits of several meanings: "Without properly understanding them,"-Worth; "not with a proper sense of gratitude."-Maranus.

93: There is increasing evidence of the obligations of the Greek sages to that "light shining in a dark place," i.e., amid an idolatrous world.]

94: [Let it be noted as the moral of our author's review, that there is no self-degradation of which man is not capable when he rejects the true God. Rom. i. 28.]

95: [Let it be noted as the moral of our author's review, that there is no self-degradation of which man is not capable when he rejects the true God. Rom. i. 28.]

96: [Compare the boastful Rousseau: "Que la trompette du jugement sonne quand elle voudra, je viendrai ce livra a la main , me presenter devant le souverain Juge." Confessions , livre i. p. 2.]

97: ["Adhere immoveably ." Alas! " let him that thinketh he standeth", etc. But I cannot part with Tatian nor think of Tertullian without recalling David's threnode: " There the shield of the mighty is vilely cast away I am distressed for thee, my brother: ... very pleasant hast thou been unto me... How are the mighty fallen, and the weapons of war perished!" Our own sad times have taught us similar lamentations for some who seemed for a time to be "burning and shining lights." God be merciful to poor frail men.] 98: From the lost works of Tatian. Ed. Otto .

99: i.e., Justin Martyr.

Diatessaron

Introductory Notes. The Text of the Diatessaron

[Section I]

Section II.

Section III.

Section IV.

Section V.

Section VI.

Section VII.

Section VIII.

Section IX.

Section X.

Section XI.

Section XII.

Section XIII.

Section XIV.

Section XV.

Section XVI.

Section XVII.

Section XVIII.

Section XIX.

Section XX.

Section XXI.

Section XXII.

Section XXIII.

Section XXIV.

Section XXV.

Section XXVI.
Section XXVII.
Section XXVIII.357
Section XXIX.
Section XXX.
Section XXXI.
Section XXXII.
Section XXXIII.
Section XXXIV.
Section XXXV.
Section XXXVI.
Section XXXVII.
Section XXXVIII.
Section XXXIX.
Section XL.
Section XLI.
Section XLII.
Section XLIII.
Section XLIV.
Section XLV.
Section XLVI.
Section XLVII.
Section XLVIII.
Section XLIX.
Section L.
Section LI.
Section LII.
Section LIII.758
Section LIV.

Section LV.

Introductory Notes.

1. In the Borgian Ms. In the name of the one God, the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, to him be the glory forever. We shall begin, with the help of God most high, the writing of the pure gospel, the blooming garden, called Diatessaron (a word meaning "fourfold"), the work compiled by Titianus the Greek out of the four evangelists-Matthew the elect, whose symbol is M, Mark the chosen, whose symbol is R, Luke the approved, whose symbol is K, and John the beloved, whose symbol is H. The work was translated from Syriac into Arabic by the excellent and learned priest Abu'l Faáraj ÔAbdulla ibn-at-Tayyib,⁵⁴ may God grant him his favour. He began with the first of⁵⁵ And he said: The Beginning⁵⁶ of the Gospel of Jesus the Son of the living God. John:57 In the beginning, etc.

2. In the Vatican Ms. In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, giver of life, the God that is one in substance in his essence, and three in persons in his attributes. The first of his Gospel is

And he said: The Beginning⁵⁸ of the Gospel of Jesus the Son of the living God. John:59 In the beginning, etc.

----- The Text of the Diatessaron Rev. Hope W. Hogg, B.D.

[Section I]

169 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and God is the Word. 270 This was in the beginning with God. 371 Everything was by his hand, and without him not even one existing thing was made. 472 In him was life, and the life is the light of men. 573 And the light shineth in the darkness, and the darkness apprehended it not.

674 There was in the days of Herod the king a priest whose name was Zacharias, of the family of Abijah; and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. 775 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all his commands, and in the uprightness of God without reproach. 876 And they had no son, for Elizabeth was barren, and they had both advanced in age. 977 And while he discharged the duties of priest in the order of his service before God, according to the custom of the priesthood it was his turn to burn incense; 1078 so he entered the temple of the Lord. 1179 And the whole gathering of the people were praying without at the time of the incense. 1280 And there appeared unto Zacharias the angel of the Lord, standing at the right of the altar of incense; 1381 and Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon him. 1482 But the angel said unto him, Be not agitated, Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John; 1583 and thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. 1684 And he shall be great before the Lord, and shall not drink wine nor strong drink, and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit¹ while he is in his mother's womb. 1786 And he shall turn back many of the children of Israel to the Lord their God. 1887 And he shall go before him in the spirit, and in the power of Elijah the prophet, to turn back the heart of the fathers to the sons, and those that obey not to the knowledge² of the righteous; and to prepare for the Lord a perfect people. 1989 And Zacharias said unto the angel, How shall I know this, since I am an old man and my wife is advanced in years? 2090 And the angel answered

and said unto him, I am Gabriel, that standeth before God; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and give thee tidings of this. 2191 Henceforth thou shalt be speechless, and shalt not be able to speak until the day in which this shall come to pass, because thou didst not trust this my word, which shall be accomplished in its time. 2292 And the people were standing awaiting Zacharias, and they were perplexed at his delaying in the temple. 2393 And when Zacharias went out, he was not able to speak unto them: so they knew that he had seen in the temple a vision; and he made signs unto them, and continued dumb. 2494 And when the days of his service were completed, he departed to his dwelling.

2595 And after those days Elizabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five months, and said, 2696 This hath the Lord done unto me in the days when he looked upon me, to remove my reproach from among men.

2797 And³ in the sixth month Gabriel the angel was sent from God to Galilee to a city called Nazareth, 2899 to a virgin given in marriage to a man named Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. 29100 And the angel entered unto her and said unto her, Peace be unto thee, thou who art filled with grace. Our Lord is with thee, thou blessed amongst women. 30101 And she, when she beheld, was agitated at his word, and pondered what this salutation could be. 31102 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with God. 32103 Thou shalt now conceive, and bear a son, and call his name Jesus. 33104 This shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High; and the Lord God will give him the throne of David his father: and he shall rule over the house of Jacob for ever; 34105 and to his kingdom there shall be no end. 35106 Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be to me when no man hath known me? 36107 The angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Spirit will come, and the power of the Most High shall rest upon thee, and therefore shall he that is born of thee be pure, and shall be called the Son of God. 37108 And lo, Elizabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her, her that is called barren. 38109 For nothing is difficult for God. 39110 Mary said, Lo, I am the handmaid of the Lord; let it be unto me according unto thy word. And the angel departed from her.

40111 And then Mary arose in those days and went in haste into the hill country, to a city of Judah; 41112 and entered into the house of Zacharias, and asked for the health of Elizabeth. 42113 And when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb. 43114 And Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit; and cried with a loud voice and said unto Mary, Blessed art thou amongst women, and blessed is the fruit that is in thy womb. 44115 Whence have I this privilege, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me? 45116 When the sound of thy salutation reached my ears, with great joy rejoiced the babe in my womb. 46117 And blessed is she who believed that what was spoken to her from the Lord would be fulfilled. 47118 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, 48119 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour, 49120 Who hath looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden:

Lo, henceforth, all generations shall pronounce blessing on me.

50121 For he hath done great things for me, who is mighty, And holy is his name.

51122 And his mercy embraceth them who fear him, Throughout the ages and the times.

52123 He wrought the victory with his arm, And scattered them that prided themselves in their opinions.

53124 He overthrew them that acted haughtily from their thrones, And raised the lowly.

54125 He satisfied with good things the hungry, And left the rich without anything.

55126 He helped Israel his servant, And remembered his mercy 56127 (According as he spake with our fathers) Unto Abraham and unto his seed for ever.

57128 And Mary abode with Elizabeth about three months, and returned unto her house.

58129 And Elizabeth's time of delivery was come; and she brought forth a son. 59130 And her neighbours and kinsfolk heard that God had multiplied his mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her. 60131 And when it was the eighth day, they came to circumcise the child, and called him Zacharias, calling him by the name of his father. 61132 And his mother answered and said unto them, Not so; but he shall be called John. 62133 And they said unto her, There is no man of thy kindred that is called by this name. 63134 And they made signs to his father, saying, How dost thou wish to name him? 64135 And he asked for a tablet, and wrote and said, His name is John. And every one wondered. 65136 And immediately his mouth was opened, and his tongue, and he spake and praised God. 65137 And fear fell on all their neighbours: and this was spoken of in all 67138 the mountains of Judah. And all who heard pondered in their hearts and said, What shall this child be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

68139 And Zacharias his father was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied and said, 69140 Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel, Who hath cared for his people, and wrought for it salvation;

70141 And hath raised for us the horn of salvation In the house of David his servant 71142 (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets from eternity), 72143 That he might save us from our enemies, And from the hand of all them that hate us.

73144 And he hath performed his mercy towards our fathers, And remembered his holy covenants, 74145 And the oath which he sware unto Abraham our father, 75146 That he would give us deliverance from the hand of our enemies, And without fear we shall⁴ serve before him 76148 All our days with equity and righteousness.

77149 And as for thee, O child, prophet of the Most High shalt thou be called.

Thou shalt go forth before the face of the Lord to prepare his way, 78150 To give the knowledge of salvation⁵ unto his people, For the forgiveness of their sins, 79152 Through the mercy of⁶ the compassion of our God, With which he careth for⁷ us, to appear⁸ from on high 80156 To give light to them that sit in darkness and under the shadow of death, And to set straight our feet in the way of peace.

81157 And the child grew and became strong in the spirit, and abode in the desert until the time of his appearing unto the children of Israel.

Section II.

1158 Now⁹ the birth of Jesus the Messiah was on this wise: In the time when his mother was given in marriage to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. 2160 And Joseph her husband was a just man and did not wish to expose her, and he purposed to put her away secretly. 3161 But when he thought of this, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, and said unto him, Joseph, son of David, fear not to take Mary thy wife, for that which is begotten¹⁰ in her is of the Holy Spirit. 4163 She shall bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus, and he shall save¹¹ his people from their sins. 5165 And all this was that the saying from the Lord by the prophet might be fulfilled:

6166 Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, And they shall call his name Immanuel, which is, being interpreted, With us is our God. 7167 And when Joseph arose from his sleep, 8168 he did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took his wife; and knew her not until she brought forth her firstborn son.

9169 And in those days there went forth a decree from Augustus Cae sar that all the

10170 people of his dominion¹² should be enrolled. This first enrolment was¹³ while Quirinius was governor of Syria. 11173 And every man went to be enrolled in his city. 12174 And Joseph went up also from Nazareth, a city of Galilee, to Judaea, to the city of David which is called Bethlehem 13175 (for he was of the house of David and of his tribe), with Mary his betrothed, she being with child, to be enrolled there. 14176 And while she was there the days for her being delivered were accomplished. 15177she brought forth her firstborn son; and she wrapped him in swaddling cloths and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them where they were staying.

16178And there were in that region shepherds abiding, keeping their flock in the watch of the night. 17179 And behold, the angel of God came unto them, and the glory of the Lord shone upon them; and they were greatly terrified. 18180 And the angel said unto them, Be not terrified; for I bring you tidings of great joy which shall be to the whole world; there is born to you this day a Saviour, 19181 which is the Lord the Messiah, in the city of David. 20182 And this is a sign for you: ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling cloths and laid in a manger. 21183 And there appeared with the angels suddenly many heavenly forces praising¹⁴ God and saying, 22185 Praise be to God in the highest, And on the earth peace, and good hope to men.

23186 And when the angels departed from them to heaven, the shepherds spake to one another and said, We will go to Bethlehem and see this word which hath been, as the Lord made known unto us. 24187 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe laid in a manger. 25188 And when they saw, they reported the word which was spoken to them about the child. 26189 And all that heard wondered at the description which the shepherds described¹⁵ to them. 27191 But Mary kept these¹⁶ sayings and discriminated¹⁷ them in her heart. 28194 And those shepherds returned, magnifying and praising God for all that they had seen and heard, according as it was described unto them.

29195 And when eight days were fulfilled that the child should be circumcised, his name was called Jesus, being that by which he was called by the angel before his conception in the womb.

30196 And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were completed, they took him up to Jerusalem to present him before the Lord (as it is written in the law of the Lord,

31197 Every male opening the womb shall be called the holy thing of the Lord), 32198 and to give a sacrificial victim as it is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of doves or two young pigeons. 33199 And there was in Jerusalem a man whose name was Simeon; and this man was upright and pious, and expecting the consolation of Israel; and the Holy Spirit was upon him. 34200 And it had been said unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death till he had seen with his eyes the Messiah¹⁸ of the Lord. 35202 And this man came by the Spirit to the temple; and at the time when his parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might present for him a sacrifice, 36203 as it is written in the law, he bare him in his arms and praised God and said, 37204 Now loosest thou the bonds of thy servant, O Lord, in peace,¹⁹ According to thy saying;

38206 For mine eye hath witnessed thy mercy, 39207 Which thou hast made ready because of the whole world;

40208 A light for the unveiling²⁰ of the nations, And a glory to thy people Israel.

41210 And Joseph and his mother were marvelling at the things which were being said concerning him. 42211 And Simeon blessed them and said to Mary his mother, Behold, he is set for the overthrow and rising of many in Israel; and for a sign of contention; 43212 and a spear²¹ shall pierce²² through thine own soul; that the thoughts of the

44215 hearts of many may be revealed. And Anna the prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher, was also advanced in years (and she dwelt with her husband seven years from her virginity, 45216 and she remained a widow about eighty-four years); and she left not the temple, and served night and day with fasting and prayer. 46217 And she also rose in that hour and thanked the Lord, and she spake of him with every one who was expecting the deliverance of Jerusalem. 47218 when they had accomplished everything according to what is in the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to Nazareth their city.

Section III.

1219 And after that, the Magi came from the east to Jerusalem, and said, Where is the King of the Jews which was born? 2220 We have seen his star in the east, and have come to worship him. 3221 And Herod the king heard, and he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. 4222 And he gathered all the chief priests and the scribes of the people, and asked them in what place the Messiah should be born. 5223 They said, In Bethlehem of Judaea: thus it is written in the prophet, 6224 Thou also, Bethlehem of Judah, Art not contemptible among the kings of Judah: From thee shall go forth a king, And he shall be a shepherd to my people Israel.

7225 Then Herod called the Magi secretly, and inquired of them the time at which the star appeared to them. 8226 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said unto them, Go and search about the child diligently; and when ye have found him, come and make known to me, that I also may go and worship him. 9227 And they, when they heard the king, departed; and lo, the star which they had seen in the east went before them, until it came and stood above the place where the child was. 10228 And when they beheld the star, they rejoiced with very great joy. 11229 And they entered the house and beheld the child with Mary his mother, and fell down worshipping him, and opened their saddle-bags and offered to him offerings, gold and myrrh and frankincense. 12230 And they saw in a dream a that they should not return to Herod, and they travelled by another way in going to their country.

13231 And when they had departed, the angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph, and said unto him, Rise, take the child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I speak to thee; for Herod is determined to seek the child to slay him. 14232 And Joseph arose and took the child and his mother in the night, and fled into Egypt, 15233 and remained in it until the time of the death of Herod: that that might be fulfilled which was said by the Lord in the prophet, which said, From Egypt did I call my son. 16234 And Herod then, when he saw that he was mocked of the Magi, was very angry, and sent and killed all the male children which were in Bethlehem and all its borders, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had inquired from the Magi. 17235 Then was fulfilled the saying in Jeremiah the prophet, which said, 18236 A voice was heard in Ramah, Weeping and much lamentation;

Rachel weeping for her children, And not willing to be consoled for their loss.

19237 But when Herod the king died, the angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to 20238 Joseph in Egypt, and said unto him, Rise and take the child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they have died who sought the child's life. 21239 And Joseph rose and took the child and his mother, and came to the land of Israel. 22240 But when he heard that Archelaus had become king over Judaea instead of Herod his father, he feared to go thither; and he saw in a dream that he should

23241 go into the land of Galilee, and that he should abide in a city called Nazareth: that the saying in the prophet might be fulfilled, that he should be called a Nazarene.

24242 And the child grew, and became strong in spirit, becoming filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

25243 And his kinsfolk used to go every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the passover. 26244 And when he was twelve years old, they went up according to their custom, to the feast. 27245 And when the days were accomplished, they returned; and the child Jesus remained in Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew not: and they supposed that he was with the children of their company. 28246 And when they had gone one day's journey, they sought him beside their people and those who knew them, and they found him not; 29247 so they returned to Jerusalem and sought him again. 30248 And after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, 31249 hearing them and asking them questions; and all who heard him wondered at his wisdom and his words. 32250 And when they saw him they wondered, and his mother said unto him, My son, why hast thou dealt with us thus? behold, I and thy father have been seeking for thee with much anxiety. 33251 And he said unto them, Why were ye seeking me? know ye not that I must be in the house of my Father? 34252 And they understood not the word which he spake unto them. 35253 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was obedient to them: and his mother used to keep all these sayings in her heart.

36254 And Jesus grew in his stature and wisdom, and in grace with God and men.

37255 And in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor in Judaea, and one of the four rulers, Herod, in Galilee; and Philip his brother, one of the four rulers, in Ituraea and in the district of Trachonitis; and Lysanias, one of the four rulers, in Abilene; 380 in the chief-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the command of God went forth to John the son of Zacharias in the desert. 391 And he came into all the region which is about Jordan,

proclaiming the baptism of repentance unto the forgiveness of sins. 402 And he was preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, and saying, 413 Repent ye; the kingdom of heaven is come near. 424 This is he that was spoken of in Isaiah the prophet, The voice which crieth in the desert, 435 Prepare ye the way of the Lord, And make straight in the plain, paths for our God.

446 All the valleys shall become filled, And all the mountains and hills shall become low; And the rough shall become plain, And the difficult place, easy;

457 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

468 This man came to bear witness, that he might bear witness to the light, that every man might believe through his mediation. 479 He was not the light, but that he might bear witness to the light, 4810 which was the light of truth, that giveth light to every man coming into the world. 4911 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. 5012 He came unto his own, and his own received him not. 5113 And those who received him, to them gave he the power that they might be sons of God,-those which believe in his name: 5214 which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of a man, but of God. 5315 And the Word became flesh, and took up his abode among us; and we saw his glory as the glory of the only Son from the Father, which is full of grace and equity. 5416 John bare witness of him, and cried, and said, This is he that I said cometh after me and was before me, because he was before me. 5517 And of his fullness received we all grace for grace. 5618 For the law was given through the mediation of Moses, but truth and grace were through Jesus Christ.

Section IV.

119 No man hath seen God at any time; the only Son, God,²³ which is in the bosom of his Father, he hath told of him.

221 And this is the witness of John when the Jews sent to him from Jerusalem priests and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? 322 And he acknowledged, and denied not; and he confessed that he was not the Messiah. 423 And they asked him again, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he said, I am not he. Art thou a prophet? He said, No. 524 They said unto him, Then who art thou? that we may answer them that sent us. 625 What sayest thou of thyself? And he said, I am the voice that crieth in the desert, Repair ye the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet. 726 And they that were sent were from²⁴ the Pharisees. 828 And they asked him and said unto him, Why baptizest thou now, when thou art not the Messiah, nor Elijah, nor a prophet? 929 John answered and said unto them, I baptize with²⁵ water: among you is standing one whom ye know not: 1031 this is he who I said cometh after me and was before me, the latchets of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose. 1132 And that was in Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

1233 Now John's raiment was camel's hair, and he was girded with skins, and his food was of locusts and honey of the wilderness.²⁶ 1335 Then went out unto him the people of Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region which is about the Jordan; 1436 and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. 1537 But when he saw many of the Pharisees²⁷ and Sadducees²⁸ coming to be baptized, he said unto them, Ye children of vipers, who hath led you to flee from the wrath to come? 1640 Do now the fruits which are worthy of repentance; and think and say not within yourselves, 17 We have a father, even Abraham; for I say unto you, that God is able to raise up of these stones children unto Abraham. 1841 Behold, the axe hath been laid at the

roots of the trees, and so every tree that beareth not good fruit shall be taken and cast into the fire. 1942 And the multitudes were asking him and saying, What shall we do? 2043 He answered and said unto them, He that hath two tunics shall²⁹ give to him that hath not; and he that hath food shall³⁰ do likewise. 2146 And the publicans also came to be baptized, and they said unto him, Teacher, what shall we do? 2247 He said unto them, Seek not more than what ye are commanded to seek. 2348 And the servants³¹ of the guard asked him and said, And we also, what shall we do? He said unto them, Do not violence to any man, nor wrong him; and let your allowances satisfy you.

2450 And when the people were conjecturing about John, and all of them thinking in their hearts whether he were haply³² the Messiah, 2552 John answered and said unto them, I baptize you with water; there cometh one after me who is stronger than I, the latchets of whose shoes I am not worthy to loosen; he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire: 2653 who taketh the fan in his hand to cleanse his threshing-floors, and the wheat he gathereth into his garners, while the straw he shall burn in fire which can³³ not be put out.

2755 And other things he taught and preached among the people.

2856 Then came Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be baptized of him. 2957 And Jesus was about thirty years old, and it was supposed that he was the son of Joseph.³⁴ 3059 And John saw Jesus coming unto him, and said, This is the Lamb of God, that taketh on itself the burden of the sins of the world! 3160 This is he concerning whom I said, There cometh after me a man who was before me, because he was ³²⁶¹ before me.³⁵ And I knew him not; but that he should be made manifest to Israel, for this cause came I to baptize with water. 3363 And John was hindering him and saying, I have need of being baptized by thee, and comest thou to me? 3464 Jesus answered him and said, Suffer this now: thus it is our duty to fulfill all righteousness. 3565 Then he suffered him. And when all the people were baptized, Jesus also was baptized. 3666 And immediately he went up out of the water, and heaven opened to him,³⁶ 3768 and the Holy Spirit descended upon him in the similitude of the body of a dove; and lo, a voice from heaven, saying, 3869 This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. 3970 And John bare witness and said, I beheld the Spirit descend from heaven like a dove; and it abode upon him. 4071 But I knew him not; but he that sent me to baptize with water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt behold the Spirit descending and lighting upon him, the same is he that baptizeth with the Holy Spirit. 4172 And I have seen and borne witness that this is the Son of God.

4273 And Jesus returned from the Jordan, filled with the Holy Spirit. 4374 And immediately the Spirit took him out into the wilderness, to be tried of the devil;³⁷ and he was with the beasts. 4476 And he fasted forty days and forty nights. And he ate nothing in those days, and at the end of them he hungered. 4577 And the tempter came and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, speak, and these stones shall become bread. 4678 He answered and said, It is written, Not by bread alone shall man live, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. 4779 Then the devil³⁸ brought him to the holy city, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, 4881 and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: And they shall take thee on their arms, So that thy foot shall not stumble against a stone.

4982 Jesus said unto him, And³⁹ it is written also, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 5084 And the devil⁴⁰ took him up to a high mountain, and shewed him all the kingdoms of the earth, and their glory, in the least time; and the devil⁴¹ said unto him, 5187 To thee will I give all this dominion, and its glory, which is delivered to me that I may give it to whomsoever I will. 5288 If then thou wilt worship before me, all of it shall be thine.

Section V.

189 Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone shalt thou serve. 290 And when the devil⁴² had completed all his temptations, he departed from him for a season. 392 And behold, the angels drew near and ministered unto him.

493 And next day John was standing, 594 and two of his disciples; and he saw Jesus as he was walking, and said, Behold, the Lamb of God! 695 And his two disciples heard him saying this,⁴³ and they followed Jesus. 797 And Jesus turned and saw them coming after him, and said unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Our master, where art thou staying? 898 And he said unto them, Come and see. And they came and saw his place, and abode with him that day: and it was about the tenth hour. 999 One of the two which heard from⁴⁴ John, and followed Jesus, was Andrew the brother of Simon. 10101 And he saw first Simon his brother, and said unto him, We have found the Messiah. 11102 And he brought him unto Jesus. And Jesus looked upon him and said, Thou art Simon, son of Jonah: thou shalt be called Cephas.⁴⁵

12104 And on the next day Jesus desired to go forth to Galilee, and he found Philip, and said unto him, Follow me. 13105 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Simon. 14106 And Philip found Nathanael, and said unto him, He of whom Moses did write in the law and in the prophets, we have found that he is Jesus the son of Joseph of Nazareth. 15107 Nathanael said unto him, Is it possible that there can be any good thing from Nazareth? Philip said unto him, Come and see. 16108 And Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and said of him, This is indeed a⁴⁶ son of Israel in whom is no guile. 17110 And Nathanael said unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus said unto him, Before Philip called thee, while thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. 18111 Nathanael answered and said unto him, My Master, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. 19112 Jesus said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, hast thou believed? thou shalt see what is greater than this. 20113 And he said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see the heavens opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

21114 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit to Galilee.

22115 And on the third day there was a feast in Cana,⁴⁷ a⁴⁸ city of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: and Jesus also and his disciples were invited to the feast. 23118 And they lacked wine: and his mother said unto Jesus, 24119 They have no wine. 25120 And Jesus said unto her, What have I to do with thee, woman? hath not mine hour come?⁴⁹ 26122 And his mother said unto the servants, What he saith unto you, do. 27123 And there were there six vessels of stone, placed for the Jews' purification, such as would contain two or three jars. 28124 And Jesus said unto them, Fill the vessels with water. 29125 And they filled them to the top. He said unto them, Draw out now, and present to the ruler of the feast. 30126 And they did so. And when the ruler of

the company tasted that water which had become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants knew, because they filled up the water), the ruler of the company called the bridegroom, and said unto him, 31127 Every man presenteth first the good wine, and on intoxication he bringeth what is poor; but thou hast kept the good wine until now. 32128 And this is the first sign⁵⁰ which Jesus did in Cans of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him. 33130 And his fame spread in all the country which was around them. 34131 And he taught in their synagogues, and was glorified by⁵¹ every man. 35133 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and entered, according to his custom, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read. 36134 And he was given the book of Isaiah the prophet. And Jesus opened the book and found the place where it was written, 37135 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, And for this anointed he me, to preach good tidings to the poor; And he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, And to proclaim forgiveness to the evil-doers,⁵² and sight to the blind, And to bring the broken into forgiveness,⁵³ 38138 And to proclaim an acceptable year of the Lord.

39139 And he rolled up the book and gave it to the servant, and went and sat down: and the eyes of all that were in the synagogue were observing him. 40140 And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled which ye have heard with your ears. 41141 And they all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which were proceeding from his mouth.

42142 And from that time began Jesus to proclaim the gospel of the kingdom of God, and to say, Repent ye, and believe in the gospel. 43143 The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of heaven hath come near.

44144 And while he was walking on the shore of the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who was called Cephas, and Andrew his brother, casting their nets into the sea; for they were fishers. 45145 And Jesus said unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. 46146 And they immediately left their nets there and followed him. 47147 And when he went on from thence, he saw other two brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and Jesus called them. 48148 And they immediately forsook the ship and their father Zebedee, and followed him.

49149 And when the multitude gathered unto him to hear the word of God, while he was standing on the shore of the sea of Gennesaret, 50150 he saw two boats standing beside the sea, while⁵⁴ the two fishers which were gone out of them were washing their nets. 51152 And one of them belonged to Simon Cephas. And Jesus went up and sat down in it, and commanded that they should move away a little from the land into the water. 52153 And he sat down and taught the multitudes from the boat. And when he had left off his speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and cast your net for a draught. 53154 And Simon answered and said unto him, My Master, we toiled all night and caught nothing; now⁵⁵ at thy word I will cast the net. 54156 And when they did this, there were enclosed⁵⁶ a great many fishes; and their net was on the point of breaking. 55158 And they beckoned to their comrades that were in the other boat, to come and help them. And when they came, they filled both boats, so that they were on the point of sinking.

Section VI.

1159 But when Simon Cephas saw this he fell before the feet of Jesus, and said unto him, My Lord, I beseech of thee to depart from me, for I am a sinful man. 2160 And amazement took

possession of him, and of all who were with him, because of the draught of the fishes which they had taken. 3161 And thus also were James and John the sons of Zebedee overtaken,⁵⁷ who were Simon's partners. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; henceforth thou shalt be a fisher of men unto life. 4163 And they brought the boats to the land; and they left everything, and followed him.

5164 And after that came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judaea; and he went about there with them, and baptized. 6165 And John also was baptizing in Aenon, which is beside Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. 7166 And John was not yet come into prison. 8167 And there was an inquiry between one of John's disciples and one of the Jews about purifying. 9168 And they⁵⁸ came unto John, and said unto him, Our master, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold, he also baptizeth, and many come to him. 10170 John answered and said unto them,⁵⁹ A man can receive nothing of himself, except it be given him⁶⁰ from heaven. 11173 Ye are they that bear witness unto me that I said, I am not the Messiah, but I am one sent⁶¹ before him. 12175 And he that hath a bride is a bridegroom: and the friend of the bridegroom is he that standeth and listeneth to him, and rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice. Lo now,⁶² behold, my joy becometh complete.⁶³ 13178 And he must increase and I decrease. 14179 For⁶⁴ he that is come from above is higher than everything; and he that is of the earth, of the earth he is, and of the earth he speaketh; and he that came down from heaven is higher than all. 15181 And he beareth witness of what he hath seen and heard: and no man receiveth his witness. 16182 And he that hath received his witness hath asserted⁶⁵ that he is truly God.⁶⁶ 17185 And he whom God hath sent speaketh the words⁶⁷ of God: God gave not the Spirit by measure. 18187 The Father loveth the Son, and hath put everything in his hands. 19188 Whosoever believeth in the Son hath eternal⁶⁸ life; but whosoever obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God cometh⁶⁹ upon him.

20191 And Jesus learned⁷⁰ that the Pharisees had heard that he had received many disciples, 21193 and that he was baptizing more than John (not that Jesus was himself baptizing, but his disciples); 22194 and so he left Judaea.

23195 And Herod the governor, because he used to be rebuked by John because of Herodias the wife of Philip his brother, and for all the sins which he was committing, added to all that also this, 24196 that he shut up John in prison.

25197 And when Jesus heard that John was delivered up, he went away to Galilee. 26198 And he entered again into Cana, where he had made the water wine. And there was at Capernaum a king's servant, whose son was sick. 27199 And this man heard that Jesus was come from Judaea to Galilee; and he went to him, and besought of him that he would come down and heal his son; for he had come near unto death. 28200 Jesus said unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye do⁷¹ not believe. 29202 The king's servant said unto him, My Lord, come down, that the child die not. 30203 Jesus said unto him, Go; for thy son is alive. And that man believed the word which Jesus spake, and went. 31204 And when he went down, his servants met him and told him, and⁷² said unto him, Thy son is alive. 32206 And he asked them at what time he recovered. They said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. 33207 And his father knew that that was at that hour in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son is alive. 34208 And he believed, he and the whole people of his house. And this is the second sign⁷³ which Jesus did when he returned from Judaea to Galilee. 35210 And he was preaching in the synagogues of Galilee.

36211 And he left Nazareth, and came and dwelt in Capernaum by the sea shore, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali: 37212 that it might be fulfilled which was said in Isaiah the prophet, who said, 38213 The land of Zebulun, the land of Naphtali, The way of the sea, the passage of the Jordan, Galilee of the nations:

39214 The people sitting in darkness Saw a great light, And those sitting in the region and in the shadow of death, There appeared to them a light.

40215 And he taught them on the sabbaths. And they wondered because of his doctrine:74 for his word was as if it were authoritative. 41217 And there was in the synagogue a man with an unclean devil, and he cried out with a loud voice, and said, Let me alone; 42218 what have I to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come for our destruction? I know thee who thou art, thou Holy One of God. 43219 And Jesus rebuked him, and said, Stop up thy mouth, and come out of him. And the demon threw him in the midst and came out of him, having done him no harm. 44220 And great amazement took hold upon every man. And they talked one with another, and said, What is this word that orders the unclean spirits with power and authority, and they come out? 45221 And the news of him spread abroad in all the region which was around them.

46222 And when Jesus went out of the synagogue, he saw a man sitting among the publicans,75 named Matthew: and he said unto him, Come after me. And he rose, and followed him.

47224 And Jesus came to the house of Simon and Andrew with James and John. 48225 And Simon's wife's mother was oppressed with a great fever, and they besought him for her. 49226 And he stood over her and rebuked her fever, and it left her, and immediately she rose and ministered to them. 50227 And at even they brought to him many that had demons: and he cast out their devils with the76 word. 51229 And all that had sick, their diseases being divers and malignant, brought them unto him. And he laid his hand on them one by one77 and healed them: 52231 that that might be fulfilled which was said in the prophet Isaiah, who said, He taketh our pains and beareth our diseases. 53232 And all the city was gathered together unto the door of Jesus. 54233 And he cast out devils also from many, as they were crying out and saying, Thou art the Messiah, the Son of God; and he rebuked them. And he suffered not the demons to speak, because they knew him that he was the Lord the Messiah.

Section VII.

1234 And in the morning of that day he went out very early, and went to a desert place, and was there praying. 2235 And Simon and those that were with him sought him. 3236 And when they found him, they said unto him, All the people seek for thee. 4237 He said unto them, Let us go into the adjacent villages and towns, that I may preach there also; for to this end did I come. 5238 And the multitudes were seeking him, and came till they reached him; and they took hold of him, that he should not go away from them. 6239 But Jesus said unto them, I must preach of the kingdom of God in other cities also: for because of this gospel was I sent. 7240 And Jesus was going about all the cities and the villages, and teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all the diseases and all the sicknesses, and casting out the devils. 8241 And his fame became known that78 he was teaching in every place and being glorified by every man. 9243 And when he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting among the tax-gatherers;79 and he said unto him, Follow me: and he rose and followed him. 10245 And the news of him was

heard of in all the land of Syria: and they brought unto him all those whom grievous ills had befallen through divers diseases, and those that were enduring torment, and those that were possessed, and lunatics,⁸⁰ and paralytics; and he healed them.

11247 And after some days Jesus entered into Capernaum again. 12248 And when they heard that he was in the house,⁸¹ many gathered, so that it could not hold them, even about the door; and he made known to them the word of God. 13250 And there were there some of the Pharisees and the teachers of the law, sitting, come from all the villages of Galilee, and Judaea, and Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was present to heal them. 14251 And some men brought a bed with a man on it who was paralytic. 15252 And they sought to bring him in and lay him before him. And when they found no way to bring him in because of the multitude of people, they went up to the roof, and let him down with his bed from the roofing,⁸² into the midst before Jesus. 16254 And when Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the paralytic, My son, thy sins are forgiven thee. 17255 And the scribes and Pharisees began to think within their hearts, Why doth this man blaspheme?⁸³ Who is it that is able to forgive sins, but God alone? 181 And Jesus knew by the spirit that they were thinking this within themselves, and he said unto them, Why do ye think this within your heart? 192 Which is better,⁸⁴ that it should be said to the paralytic, Thy sins are forgiven thee, or that it should be said to him, Arise, and take thy bed, and walk? 204 That ye may know that the Son of man is empowered on earth to forgive sins (and he said to the paralytic), 215 I say unto thee, Arise, take thy bed, and go to thine house. 226 And he rose forthwith, and took his bed, and went out in the presence of all. And he went to his house praising God. 237 And when those multitudes saw, they feared; and amazement took possession of them, and they praised God, who had given such power to men. 248 And they said, We have seen marvellous things to-day, of which we have never before seen the like.

259 And after that, Jesus went out, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting among the publicans:⁸⁵ and he said unto him, Follow me. 2611 And he left everything, and rose, and followed him. 2712 And Levi made him a great feast in his house. And there was a great multitude of the publicans and others sitting with him. 2813 And the scribes and Pharisees murmured, and said unto his disciples, Why do ye eat and drink with the publicans and sinners? 2914 Jesus answered and said unto them, The physician seeketh not those who are well, but those that are afflicted with grievous sickness.⁸⁶ 3016 I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners, to repentance. 3117 And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast always, and pray, and the Pharisees also, but thy disciples eat and drink? 3218 He said unto them, Ye cannot make the sons of the marriage feast⁸⁷ fast, while the bridegroom is with them. 3320 Days will come, when the bridegroom is taken away from them; then will they fast in those days. 3421 And he spake unto them a parable: No man inserteth a new patch and seweth it in a worn garment, lest the newness of the new take from the worn, and there occur a great rent. 3522 And no man putteth fresh wine into old skins, lest the wine burst the skins, and the skins be destroyed, and the wine spilled; but they put the fresh wine in the new skins, and both are preserved. 3623 And no man drinketh old wine and straightway desireth fresh; for he saith, The old is better.

3724 And while Jesus was walking on the sabbath day among the sown fields, his disciples hungered. And they were rubbing the ears with their hands, and eating. 3825 But some of the Pharisees, when they saw them, said unto him, See, why⁸⁸ do thy disciples on the sabbath day that which is not lawful? 3927 But Jesus said unto them, Have ye not read in olden time what

David did, when he had need and hungered, he and those that were with him? 4028 how he entered the house of God, when Abiathar was high priest, and ate the bread of the table of the Lord, which it was not lawful that any should eat, save the priests, and gave to them that were with him also? 4129 And he said unto them, The sabbath was created because of man, and man was not created because of the sabbath. 4230 Or have ye not read in the law, that the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and yet they are blameless? 4331 I say unto you now, that here is what⁸⁹ is greater than the temple. 4433 If ye had known this.⁹⁰ I love mercy, not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned⁹¹ those on whom is no blame. 4536 The Lord of the sabbath is the Son of man. 4637 And his relatives heard, and went out to take him, and said, He hath gone out of his mind.

4738 And on the next⁹² sabbath day he entered⁹³ into the synagogue and was teaching. 4841 And there was there a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and the Pharisees were watching him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day, that they might find the means of accusing him. 4942 But he knew their thoughts, and said unto the man whose hand was withered, Rise and come near into the midst of the synagogue. 5043 And when he came and stood, Jesus said unto them, I ask you, which is lawful to be done on the sabbath day, good or evil? shall lives be saved or destroyed? 5144 But they were silent. Regarding⁹⁴ them with anger, being grieved because of the hardness of their hearts. And he said unto the man, Stretch out thy hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand became straight. 5246 Then he said unto them, What man of you shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a well on the sabbath day, will not take it and lift it out? 5347 And how much is man better than a sheep! Wherefore it is lawful on the sabbath to do good.

Section VIII.

148 And the Pharisees went out, and consulted together concerning him, that they might destroy him. 249 And Jesus perceived, and removed thence: and great multitudes followed him; and he healed all of them: 350 and he forbade them that they should not make him known:⁹⁵ 452 that the saying in Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which said, 553 Behold, my servant⁹⁶ with whom I am pleased; My beloved in whom my soul hath delighted:⁹⁷ My spirit have I put upon him, And he shall proclaim to the nations judgement.

656 He shall not dispute, nor cry out; And no man shall hear his voice in the marketplace.

757 And a bruised reed shall he not break, And a smoking lamp⁹⁸ shall he not extinguish, Until he shall bring forth judgement unto victory.

859 And the nations shall rejoice in his name.⁹⁹

961 And in those days Jesus went out to the mountain that he might pray, and he spent the night¹⁰⁰ there in prayer to God. 1063 And when the morning was come, he called the disciples. And he went towards the sea: and there followed him much people from Galilee that he might pray,¹⁰¹ and from Judaea, 1165 and from Jerusalem, and from Idumaea, and from beyond Jordan, and from Tyre, and from Sidon, and from Decapolis; and great multitudes came unto him, which had heard what he did. 1266 And he spake to his disciples to bring him the boat because of the multitudes, that they might not throng him. 1367 And he healed many, so that they were almost falling on him¹⁰² on account of their seeking to get near him. And¹⁰³ those that had plagues and unclean spirits, 1470 as soon as they beheld him, would fall, and cry out, and say, Thou art the

Son of God. 1571 And he rebuked them much, that they should not make him known. 1672 And those that were under the constraint of 104 unclean spirits were healed. 1774 And all of the crowd were seeking to come near 105 him; because power went out from him, and he healed them all.

1876 And when Jesus saw the multitudes, he went up to the mountain. 1977 And he called his disciples, and chose from them twelve; and they are those whom he named apostles: 2078 Simon, whom he named Cephas, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew, and Matthew and Thomas, and 2179 James the son of Alphaeus, and 2280 Simon which was called the Zealot, and Judas the son of James, and Judas the Iscariot, being he that had betrayed him. 106 2382 And Jesus went down with them and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and the great multitude of people. 2483 And these twelve he chose to be with him, and that he might send them to preach, 2584 and to have power to heal the sick and to cast out devils.

2685 Then he lifted up his eyes unto them, and opened his mouth, and taught them, and said, 2786 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for the kingdom of heaven is theirs.

2887 Blessed are the sorrowful: for they shall be comforted.

2988 Blessed are the humble: for they shall inherit the earth.

3089 Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be satisfied.

3190 Blessed are the merciful: for on them shall be mercy.

3291 Blessed are the pure in their hearts: for they shall see God.

3392 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the sons of God.

3493 Blessed are they that were persecuted 107 for righteousness' sake: for the kingdom of heaven is theirs.

3595 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and separate you from them, and persecute you, and reproach you, and shall speak against you with all evil talk, for my sake, falsely. 3696 Then rejoice and be glad, for your reward is great in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets before you.

3797 But woe unto you rich! for ye have received your consolation.

3898 Woe unto you that are satisfied! ye shall hunger.

Woe unto you that laugh now! ye shall weep and be sad.

3999 Woe unto you when men praise you! for so did their fathers use to do to the false prophets.

40100 Unto you do I say, ye which hear, Ye are the salt of the earth: if then the salt become tasteless, wherewith shall it be salted? For any purpose it is of no use, but is thrown outside, and men tread upon it. 41101 Ye are the light of the world. It is impossible that a city built on a mountain should be hid. 42102 Neither do they light a lamp and place it under a bushel, but on the lamp-stand, and it giveth light to all who are in the house. 43103 So shall 108 your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven. 44105

There is nothing secret that shall not be revealed, or hidden that shall not be known. 45106
Whoever hath ears that hear, let him hear.

46107 Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets; I came not to destroy, but to complete. 47108 Verily I say unto you, Until heaven and earth shall pass, there shall not pass one point or one letter of the law, until all of it shall be accomplished. 48109 Every one who shall violate now one of these small commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called lacking in the kingdom of heaven: every one that shall do and teach shall109 be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 49111 I say unto you now, unless your righteousness abound more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven.

50112 Ye have heard that it was said to the ancients, Do not kill; and every one that killeth is worthy of the judgement. 51113 But I say unto you that every one who is angry with his brother without a cause is worthy of the judgement; and every one that saith to his brother, Thou foul one, is condemned110 by the synagogue; and whosoever saith to him, Thou fool, is worthy of the fire of Gehenna. 52115 If thou art now offering thy gift at the altar, and rememberest there that thy brother hath conceived against thee any grudge, 53116 leave thy gift at the altar, and go first and satisfy thy brother, and then return and offer thy gift. 54117 Join111 thine adversary quickly, and while thou art still with him in the way, give a ransom and free thyself from him; test thine adversary deliver thee to the judge, 55119 and the judge deliver thee to the tax-collector, and thou fall into prison. 56120 And verily I say unto thee, Thou shall not go out thence until thou payest the last farthing.

57121 Ye have heard that it was said, Do not commit adultery: 58122 but I now say unto you, that every one that looketh at a woman lusting after her hath forthwith already committed adultery with her in his heart. 59123 If thy right eye injure thee, put it out and cast it from thee; for it is preferable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body go into the fire of hell. 60124 And if thy right hand injure thee, cut it off and cast it from thee; and it is better for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body fall into Gehenna. 61125 It was said that he that putteth away his wife should give her a writing of divorcement: 62126 but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, except for the cause of adultery, hath made it lawful for112 her to commit adultery: and whosoever taketh one that is put away committeth adultery.

Section IX.

1128 Ye have heard also that it was said unto the ancients, Lie not, but perform unto God in thy oaths: 2129 but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne; 3130 nor by the earth, for it is a footstool under his feet; nor yet by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great113 King. 4132 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make in it one lock of hair black or white. 5133 But your word shall be either Yea or Nay, and what is in excess of this is of the evil one.

6134 Ye have heard that it was said, Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth: 7135 but I say unto you, Stand not in opposition to the evil;114 but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right cheek,115 turn to him also the other. 8138 And he that would sue thee, and take thy tunic, leave to him also thy wrapper. 9 And whosoever compelleth thee one mite, go with him twain. 10139 And he that asketh thee, give unto him: and he that would borrow of thee, prevent him not. And prosecute116 not him

that taketh thy substance. 11141 And as ye desire that men should do to you, so do ye also to them.

12142 Ye have heard that it was said, Love thy neighbour and hate thine enemy: 13143 but I say unto you, Love your enemies, and pray for those that curse you, and deal well with those that hate you, and pray for those who take you with violence and persecute you; 14144 that ye may be sons of your heavenly Father, who maketh his sun to rise on the good and the evil, and sendeth down his rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. 15145 If ye love them that love you, what reward shall ye have? for the publicans and sinners also love those that love them. 16146 And if ye do a kindness to those who treat you well, where is your superiority? for sinners also do likewise. 17147 And if ye lend to him of whom ye hope for a reward,¹¹⁷ where is your superiority? for the sinners also lend to sinners, seeking recompense from¹¹⁸ them. 18150 But love your enemies, and do good to them, and lend, and cut not off the hope of any man; that your reward may be great, and ye may be the children of the Highest: for he is lenient towards the wicked and the ungrateful. 19151 Be ye merciful, even as your Father also is merciful. 20152 And if ye inquire for the good of your brethren only, what more have ye done than others? is not this the conduct of the publicans also? 21153 Be ye now¹¹⁹ perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

22155 Consider your alms; do them not before men to let them see you: and if it be not so,¹²⁰ ye have no reward before your Father which is in the heavens. 23157 When then thou givest an alms now, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as do the people of hypocrisy, in the synagogues and the marketplaces, that men may praise them. And verily say I unto you, They have received their reward. 24158 But thou, when thou doest alms, let thy left hand not know what thy right hand doeth; 25159 that thine alms may be concealed: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

26160 And whenever thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites, who love to stand in the synagogues and in the corners of the marketplaces for prayers, that men may behold them. 27161 And verily say I unto you, They have received their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and fasten thy door, and pray to thy Father in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. 28162 And whenever ye pray, be not babblers, as the heathen; for they think that by the abundance of their words they shall be heard. 29163 Then be not ye now like unto them: for your Father knoweth your request before ye ask him. 30164 One of his disciples said unto him, Our Lord, teach us to pray, as John taught his disciples. 31165 Jesus said unto them, Thus now pray ye now:¹²¹ 32167 Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. 33168 Thy kingdom come. 34169 Thy will be done,¹²² as in heaven, so on earth. Give us the food of to-day. 35171 And forgive, us our trespasses, as we forgave those that trespassed against us. 36172 And bring us not into temptations, but deliver us from the evil one. 37173 For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever and ever.¹²³ If ye forgive men their wrong-doing,¹²⁴ your Father which is in heaven will forgive you. 38176 But if ye forgive not men, neither will your Father pardon your wrong-doing.

39177 When ye fast, do not frown, as the hypocrites; for they make their faces austere, that they may be seen of¹²⁵ men that they are fasting. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 40179 But when thou fastest, wash thy face and anoint thy head; 41180 that thou make not an appearance to men of fasting, but to thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which

seeth in secret shall reward thee.

42181 Be not agitated, little flock; for your Father hath delighted to give you the kingdom. 43182 Sell your possessions, and give in alms; take to yourselves purses that wax not old. 44183 Lay not up treasure on earth, where moth and worm corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: 45184 but lay up for yourselves treasure in heaven, where moth and worm do not corrupt, nor thieves break through nor steal: 46185 for where your treasure is, there also will your heart be. 47186 The lamp of the body is the eye: if then¹²⁶ thine eye now be sound, thy whole body also shall be light. 48188 But if thine eye be evil, all thy body shall be dark. And if the light which is in thee is darkness, how great is¹²⁷ thy darkness! 49190 Be watchful that the light which is in thee be not darkness. 50191 Because that, if thy whole body is light, and have no part dark, it shall all be light, as the lamp giveth light to thee with its flame.

Section X.

1192 No man can serve two masters; and that because it is necessary that he hate one of them and love the other, and honour one of them and despise the other. 2193 Ye cannot serve God and possessions. And because of this I say unto you, Be not anxious for yourselves,¹²⁸ what ye shall eat and what ye shall drink; neither for your bodies, what ye shall put on. Is not the life better than the food, and the body than the raiment? 3195 Consider the birds of the heaven, which sow not, nor reap, nor store in barns; and yet your Father which is in heaven feedeth them. Are not ye better than they? 4196 Who of you when he trieth is able to add to his stature one cubit? 5197 If then ye are not able for a small thing, why are ye anxious about the rest? 6198 Consider the wild lily, how it grows, although it toils not, nor spins; 7199 and I say unto you that Solomon in the greatness of his glory was not clothed like one of them. 8200 And if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast¹²⁹ into the oven, how much more shall be unto you, O ye of little faith! 9202 Be not anxious, so as to say, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, With what shall we be clothed? 10203 Neither let your minds be perplexed in this: all these things the nations of the world seek; and your Father which is in heaven knoweth your need of all these things. 11204 Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these shall come to you as something additional for you. 12205 Be not anxious for the morrow; for the morrow shall be anxious for what belongs to it. Sufficient unto the day is its evil.

13206 Judge not, that ye be not judged: condemn¹³⁰ not, that ye be not condemned: 14208 forgive, and it shall be forgiven you: release, and ye shall be released: give, that ye may be given unto; with good measure, abundant, full, they shall thrust¹³¹ into your bosoms. 15210 With what measure ye measure it shall be measured to you. See to it what ye hear: with what measure ye measure it shall be measured to you; and ye shall be given more. 16211 I say unto those that hear, He that hath shall be given unto; and he that hath not, that which he regards¹³² as his shall be taken from him.

17213 And he spake unto them a parable, Can a blind man haply guide a blind man? shall¹³³ they not both fall into a hollow? 18215 A disciple is not better than his master; every perfect man shall be as his master. 19216 Why lookest thou at the mote which is in the eye of thy brother, but considerest not the column that is in thine own eye? 20217 Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, I will take out the mote from thine eye; and the column which is in thine eye thou seest not? Thou hypocrite, take out first the column from thine eye; and then shalt thou see to take out

the mote from the eye of thy brother.

21218 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest they trample them with their feet, and return and wound you.

22219 And he said unto them, Who of you, that hath a friend, goeth to him at midnight, and saith unto him, 23220 My friend, lend me three loaves; for a friend hath come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to offer to him: 24221 and that friend shall answer him from within, and say unto him, Trouble me not; for the door is shut, and my children are with me in bed, and I cannot rise and give thee? 25222 And verily I say unto you, If he will not give him because of friendship, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him what he seeketh. 26223 And I also say unto you, Ask, and ye shall be given unto; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 27224 Every one that asketh receiveth, and he that seeketh findeth, and he that knocketh, it shall be opened to him. 28225 What father of you, shall his son ask for bread-will he, think you, give him a stone? 29226 and if he ask of him a fish, will he, think you, instead of the fish give him a serpent? and if he ask him for an egg, will he, think you, extend to him a scorpion? 30228 If ye then, although being evil, know the gifts which are good, and give them to your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? 31229 Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: this is the law and the prophets.

32230 Enter¹³⁵ ye by the narrow gate; for the wide gate and the broad way lead to destruction, and many they be which go therein. 33232 How narrow is the gate and straitened the way leading to life! and few be they that find it.

34233 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's¹³⁶ clothing, while within they are ravening wolves. 35235 But by their fruits ye shall know them. For every tree is known by its fruit. For figs are not gathered¹³⁷ of thorns, neither are grapes plucked of briars. 36237 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit, but the evil tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 37238 The good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can the evil tree bring forth good fruit. 38239 The good man from the good treasures that are in his heart bringeth forth good things; and the evil man from the evil treasures that are in his heart bringeth forth evil things: and from the overflowings of the heart the lips speak. 39240 Every tree that beareth not good fruit is cut down and cast into the fire. 40241 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 41242 Not all that say unto me, My Lord, my Lord, shall enter the kingdom of the heavens; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 42243 Many shall say unto me in that day, My Lord, my Lord, did we not prophesy in thy name, and in thy name cast out devils, and in thy name do many powers? 43244 Then shall I say unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye servants of iniquity. 44245 Every man that cometh unto me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to what he is like: 45246 he is like the wise man which built a house, and digged and went deep, and laid the foundations on a rock: and the rain came down, and the rivers overflowed, and the winds blew, and shook that house, and it fell not: 46247 for its foundation was laid on rocks. 47248 And every one that heareth these my words, and doeth them not, is like the foolish man which built his house on sand, without foundation: 48249. and the rain descended, and the rivers overflowed, and the winds blew, and smote upon that house, and it fell: and the fall of it was great.

Section XI.

1250 And when Jesus finished these sayings, the multitudes were astonished at his teaching; 2251 and that because he was teaching them as one having authority, not as their scribes and the Pharisees.

3252 And when he descended from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

4253 And when Jesus entered Capernaum, the servant of one of the chiefs was in an evil case, and he was precious to him, and he was at the point of death. 5254 And he heard of Jesus, and came to him with the elders of the Jews; 6255 and he besought him, and said, My Lord, my boy is laid in the house paralysed,¹³⁸ and he is suffering grievous torment. 71 And the elders urgently requested of him, and said, He is worthy that this should be done unto him: 82 for he loveth our people, and he also built the synagogue for us. 93 Jesus said unto him, I will come and heal him. 104 That chief answered and said, My Lord, I am not worthy that my roof should shade thee; but it sufficeth that thou speak a word, and my lad shall be healed. 115 And I also am a man in obedience to authority, having under my hand soldiers:¹³⁹ and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant that he do this, and he doeth it. 127 And when Jesus heard that, he marvelled at him,¹⁴⁰ and turned and said unto the multitude that were coming with him, Verily I say unto you, I have not found in Israel the like of this faith. 139 I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall recline with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven: 1410 but the children of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: and there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 1511 And Jesus said to that chief, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, so shall it be unto thee. 1612 And his lad was healed in that hour. And that chief returned to the house and found that sick servant healed.

1713 And the day after, he was going to a city called Nain, and his disciples with him, and a great multitude. 1814 And when he was come near the gate of the city, he saw a crowd¹⁴¹ accompanying one that was dead, the only son of his mother; and his mother was a widow: and there was with her a great multitude of the people of the city. 1916 And when Jesus saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. 2017 And he went and advanced to the bier, and the bearers of it stood still; and he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 2118 And that dead man sat up and began to speak; and he gave him to his mother. 2219 And fear came on all the people: and they praised God, and said, There hath risen among us a great prophet: and, God hath had regard to his people. 2320 And this news concerning him spread in all Judaea, and in all the region which was about them.

2421 And when Jesus saw great multitudes surrounding him, he commanded them to depart to the other side. 2522 And while they were going in the way, there came one of the scribes and said unto him, My Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. Jesus said unto him, 2623 The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven have nests; but the Son of man hath not a place in which to lay his head. 2724 And he said unto another, Follow me. And he said unto him, My Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 2825 Jesus said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their dead; but thou, follow me and preach the kingdom of God. 2926 And another said unto him, I will follow thee, my Lord; but first suffer me to go and salute my household and come. 3027 Jesus said unto him, There is no one who putteth his hand to the plough¹⁴² and looketh behind him, and yet is fit for the kingdom of God.

3129 And he said to them on that day in the evening, Let us go over to the other side of the lake; and he left¹⁴³ the multitudes. 3231 And Jesus went up and sat in the ship, he and his disciples, and there were with them other ships. 3332 And there occurred on the sea a great tempest¹⁴⁴ of whirlwind and wind, and the ship was on the point of sinking from the greatness¹⁴⁵ of the waves. 3435 But Jesus was sleeping on a cushion in the stern of the ship; and his disciples came and awoke him, and said unto him, Our Lord, save us; lo, we perish. 3536 And he rose, and rebuked the winds and the turbulence of the water, and said to the sea, Be still, for thou art rebuked; and the wind was still, and there was a great calm. 3637 And he said unto them, Why are ye thus afraid? and why have ye no faith? 3738 And they feared greatly.¹⁴⁶ And they marvelled, and said one to another, Who, think you, is this, who commandeth also the wind and the waves and the sea, and they obey him?

3840 And they departed and came to the country of the Gadarenes, which is on the other side, opposite the land of Galilee. 3941 And when he went out of the ship to the land, there met him from among the tombs a man who had a devil for a long time, and wore no clothes, neither dwelt in a house, but among the tombs. 4042 And no man was able to bind him with chains, because any time that he was bound with chains and fetters he cut the chains and loosened the fetters; ⁴¹⁴³ and he was snatched¹⁴⁷ away of the devil into the desert, and no man was able to quiet him; and at all times, in the night and in the day, he would be among the tombs and in the mountains; ⁴²⁴⁵ and no man was able to pass by that way; and he would cry out and wound himself with stones. ⁴³⁴⁶ And when he saw Jesus at a distance, he hastened and worshipped him, and cried with a loud voice and said, ⁴⁴⁴⁷ What have we to do with thee, Jesus, Son of the most high God? ⁴⁵⁴⁸ I adjure thee by God, torment me not. And Jesus commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man: and he had suffered¹⁴⁸ a long time since the time when he came into captivity to it. ⁴⁶⁵⁰ And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? He said unto him, Legion; for there had entered into him many devils. ⁴⁷⁵¹ And they besought him that he would not command them to depart into the depths. ⁴⁸⁵² And there was there a herd of many swine, feeding in the mountain, and those devils besought him to give them leave to enter the swine; and he gave them leave. ⁴⁹⁵³ And the devils went out of the man and entered into the swine. And that herd hastened to the summit and fell down into the midst of the sea, about two thousand, and they were choked in the water. ⁵⁰⁵⁴ And when the keepers saw what happened, they fled, and told those in the cities and villages. ⁵¹⁵⁵ And the people went out to see what had happened; and they came to Jesus, and found the man whose devils had gone out, clothed, modest,¹⁴⁹ seated at the feet of Jesus; and they feared. ⁵²⁵⁷ And they reported what they saw, and how the man was healed who had a devil, and concerning those swine also.

Section XII.

¹⁵⁸ And all the multitude of the Gadarenes entreated him to depart from them, because that great fear took hold upon them.

²⁵⁹ But Jesus went up into the ship, and crossed, and came to his city. ³⁶⁰ And that man from whom the devils went out entreated that he might stay with him; but Jesus sent him away, and said unto him, ⁴⁶¹ Return to thy house, and make known what God hath done for thee. ⁵⁶² And he went, and began to publish in Decapolis¹⁵⁰ what Jesus had done for him; and they all marvelled.

664 And when Jesus had crossed in the ship to that side, a great multitude received him; and they were all looking for him. 765 And a man named Jairus, the chief of the synagogue, fell before the feet of Jesus, 866 and besought him much, and said unto him, I have an only daughter, and she is come nigh unto death; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. 967 And Jesus rose, and his disciples, and they followed him. 1068 And there joined him a great multitude, and they pressed him.

1169 And a woman, which had a flow of blood for twelve years, 1270 had suffered much of many physicians, and spent all that she had, and was not benefited at all, but her trouble increased further. 1371 And when she heard of Jesus, she came in the thronging of the crowd behind him, 1472 and touched¹⁵¹ his garments; and she thought within herself, If I could reach to touch his garments, I should live. 1574 And immediately the fountain of her blood was dried; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her plague. 1675 And Jesus straightway knew within himself that power had gone out of him; and he turned to the crowd, and said, Who approached unto my garments? 1776 And on their denying, all of them, Simon Cephas and those with him said unto him, Our Master, the multitudes throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, Who approached unto me? 1877 And he said, Some one approached unto me; and I knew that power went forth from me. 1978 And that woman, when she saw that she was not hid from him, came fearing and agitated (for she knew what had happened to her), 2079 and fell down and worshipped him, and told, in the presence of all the people, for what reason she touched him, and how she was healed immediately. 2180 And Jesus said unto her, Be of good courage, daughter; thy faith hath made thee alive; depart in peace, and be whole from thy plague.

2281 And while he was yet speaking, there came a man from the house of the chief of the synagogue, and said unto him, Thy daughter hath died; so trouble not the teacher. 2382 But Jesus heard, and said unto the father of the maid, Fear not: but believe only, and she shall live. 2483 And he suffered no man to go with him, except Simon Cephas, and James, and John the brother of James. 2584 And they reached the house of the chief of the synagogue; and he saw them agitated, weeping and wailing. And he entered, and said unto them, 2685 Why are ye agitated and weeping? the maid hath not died, but she is sleeping. 2786 And they laughed at him, for they knew that she had died. 2887 And he put every man forth without, and took the father of the maid, and her mother, and Simon, and James, and John, and entered into the place where the maid was laid. 2988 And he took hold of the hand of the maid, and said unto her, Maid, arise. And her spirit returned, and straightway she arose and walked: 3089 and she was about twelve years of age. And he commanded that there should be given to her something to eat. 3190 And her father wondered greatly: and he warned them that they should tell no man what had happened. 3291 And this report spread in all that land.

3392 And when Jesus crossed over from there, there joined him two blind men, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. 3493 And when he came to the house, those two blind men came to him: and Jesus said unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, our Lord. 3594 Then he touched¹⁵² their eyes, and said, As ye have believed, it shall be unto you. 3696 And immediately their eyes were opened. And Jesus forbade them, and said, See that no man know. 3797 But they went out and published the news in all that land.

3898 And when Jesus went out, they brought to him a dumb man having a devil. 3999 And on the going out of the devil that dumb man spake. And the multitudes marvelled, and said, It was never so seen in Israel

40100 And Jesus was going about in all the cities and in the villages, and teaching in their synagogues, and proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease and sickness; and many followed him. 41101 And when Jesus saw the multitudes, he had compassion on them, for they were wearied and scattered,¹⁵³ as sheep that have no shepherd. 42103 And he called his twelve disciples, and gave them power and much authority over all devils and diseases; 43104 and sent them two and two, that they might proclaim the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. 44105 And he charged them, and said, Walk not in the way of the heathen, nor enter into the cities of the Samaritans.¹⁵⁴ 45107 Go especially unto the sheep that are lost of the sons of Israel. 46108 And when ye go, proclaim and say, The kingdom of heaven is come near. 47109 And heal the sick, and cleanse the lepers, and cast out the devils: freely ye have received, freely give. 48110 Get you not gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses; and take nothing for the way, 49111 except a staff only; nor bag, nor bread; neither shall ye have two tunics, nor shoes, nor staff, but be shod with sandals; 50112 for the labourer is worthy of his food. 51113 And whatever city or village ye enter, inquire who is worthy in it, and there be until ye go out. 52114 And when ye enter into the house, ask for the peace of the house: and if the house is worthy, your peace shall come upon it; 53115 but if it is not worthy, your peace shall return unto you. 54116 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your sayings, when ye go out from that house, or from that village, shake off the dust that is under your feet against them for a testimony. 55117 And verily I say unto you, To the land of Sodom and Gomorrah there shall be rest in the day of judgement, rather than to that city.

Section XIII.

1118 I am sending you as lambs among wolves: be ye now wise as serpents, and harmless¹⁵⁵ as doves. 2120 Beware of men: they shall deliver you to the councils of the magistrates, and scourge you in their synagogues; 3121 and shall bring you before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and against the nations. 4122 And when they deliver you up, be not¹⁵⁶ anxious, nor consider beforehand, what ye shall say; but ye shall be given¹⁵⁷ in that hour what ye ought to speak. 5125 Ye do not speak, but the Spirit of your Father speaketh in you. 6126 The brother shall deliver up his brother to death, and the father his son; and the sons shall rise against their parents, and put them to death. 7127 And ye shall be hated of every man because of my name; but he that endureth unto the end of the matter shall be saved.¹⁵⁸ 8129 When they expel you from this city, flee to another. Verily I say unto you, Ye shall not finish all the cities of the people of Israel, until the Son of man come.

9130 A disciple is not superior to his lord, nor a servant to his master. 10131 For it is enough then for the disciple that he be as his lord, and the servant as his master. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebul, how much more the people of his house! 11132 Fear them not therefore:¹⁵⁹ for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; nor hid, that shall not be disclosed and published. 12134 What I say unto you in the darkness, speak ye in the light; and what ye have told secretly in the ears in closets, let it be proclaimed on the housetops. 13135 I say unto you now, my beloved, Be not agitated at¹⁶⁰ those who kill the body, but have no power to kill

the soul. I will inform you whom ye shall fear: 14137 him¹⁶¹ which is able to destroy soul and body in hell. 15139 Yea, I say unto you, Be afraid of him especially. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing in a bond?¹⁶² and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. 16141 But what concerns you: even the hair of your heads also is numbered. 17142 Fear not therefore; ye are better than many sparrows. 18143 Every man who confesseth me now before men, I also will confess him before my Father which is in heaven; 19144 but whosoever denieth me before men, I also will deny him before my Father which is in heaven.

20145 Think ye that I am come to cast peace into the earth? I came not to cast peace, but to cast dissension. 21146 Henceforth there shall be five in one house, three of them disagreeing with two, and the two with the three. 22147 The father shall become hostile to his son, and the son to his father; and the mother to her daughter, and the daughter to her mother; and the mother in law to her daughter in law, and the daughter in law to her mother in law: 23148 and a man's enemies shall be the people of his house. 24149 Whosoever loveth father or mother better than me is not worthy of me; and whosoever loveth son or daughter more than his love of me is not worthy of me. 25150 And every one that doth not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. 26151 Whosoever findeth his life¹⁶³ shall lose it; and whosoever loseth his life¹⁶⁴ for my sake shall find it.

27154 And whosoever receiveth you receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. 28155 And whosoever receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall take¹⁶⁵ a prophet's reward; and whosoever shall receive a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall take¹⁶⁶ a righteous man's reward. 29158 And every one that shall give to drink to one of these least ones a drink of water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

30159 And when Jesus finished charging his twelve disciples, he removed thence to teach and preach in their cities. 31160 And while they were going in the way they entered into a certain village; and a woman named Martha entertained him in her house. 32161 And she had a sister named Mary, and she came and sat at the feet of our Lord, and heard his sayings. 33162 But Martha was disquieted by much serving; and she came and said unto him, My Lord, givest thou no heed that my sister left me alone to serve? speak to her that she help me. 34163 Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art solicitous and impatient¹⁶⁷ on account of many things: but what is sought is one thing. 35165 But Mary hath chosen for herself a good portion, and that which shall not be taken from her.

36166 And the apostles went forth, and preached to the people that they might repent. 37167 And they cast out many devils, and anointed many sick with oil, and healed them. 38168 And the disciples of John told him¹⁶⁸ of all these things. 39170 And when John heard in the prison of the doings of the Messiah, he called two of his disciples, and sent them to Jesus, and said, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another? 40171 And they came to Jesus, and said unto him, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, and said. 41172 Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another? And in that hour he cured many of diseases, and of plagues of an evil spirit; and he gave sight to many blind. 42173 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and tell John everything ye have seen and heard: the blind see, and the lame walk, and the lepers are cleansed, and the blind¹⁶⁹ hear, and the dead rise, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. 43175 And blessed is he who

doubteth not in me.

44176 And when John's disciples departed, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? a reed shaken with the winds? And if not, then what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? 45177 Behold, they that are in magnificent garments and in voluptuousness are in the abode of kings. 46178 And if not, then what went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. 47179 This is he of whom it is written, I am sending my messenger before thy face To prepare the way before thee.

Section XIV.

1180 Verily I say unto you, There hath not arisen among those whom women have borne a greater than John the Baptist; but he that is little now in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

2181 And all the people which heard, and the publicans, justified¹⁷⁰ God, for they had been baptized with the baptism of John. 3183 But the Pharisees and the scribes wronged¹⁷¹ the purpose of God in themselves, in that they were not baptized of him. 4185 And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven is snatched away by violence. 5186 The law and the prophets were until John; and after that, the kingdom of God is preached, and all press to enter it: and they that exert themselves snatch it away. 6187 All the prophets and the law until John prophesied. 7188 And if ye will, then receive it, that he is Elijah, which is to come. 8189 Whosoever hath ears that hear let him hear. 9190 Easier is the perishing of heaven and earth, than the passing away of one point of the law. 10191 To whom then shall I liken the people of this generation,¹⁷² and to whom are they like? 11193 They are like the children sitting in the market, which call to their companions, and say, We sang to you, and ye danced not; we wailed to you, and ye wept not. 12194 John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye said, 13195 He hath demons: and the Son of man came eating and drinking; and ye said, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a drinker of wine, and an associate of publicans and sinners! 14196 And wisdom was justified of all her children. 15197 And when he said that, they came to the house. And there gathered unto him again multitudes, so that they found not bread to eat. 16198 And while he was casting out a devil which was dumb, when he cast out that devil, that dumbman spake. And the multitudes marvelled. 17199 And the Pharisees, when they heard, said, This man doth not cast out the devils, except by Beelzebul the chief of the demons, which is in him. 18200 And others requested of him a sign from heaven, to tempt him. 19201 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them in parables, Every kingdom that withstandeth itself shall become desolate; and every house or city that disagreeeth with itself shall not stand: 20202 and if a devil cast out a devil, he withstandeth himself; neither shall he be able to stand, but his end shall be. 21203 Then how now shall his kingdom stand? for ye said that I cast out devils by Beelzebul. 22204 And if I by Beelzebul cast out the devils, then your children, by what do they cast them out? And for this cause they shall be judges against you. 23205 But if I by the Spirit of God cast out devils, then the kingdom of God is come near unto you. 24206 Or how can a man enter into the house of a valiant man, and seize his garments,¹⁷³ if he do not beforehand secure himself¹⁷⁴ from that valiant man? and then will he cut off¹⁷⁵ his house. 25210 But when the valiant man is armed, guarding his house, his possessions are in peace. 26211 But if one come who is more valiant than he, he overcometh him, and taketh his whole armour, on which he relieth, and divideth

his spoil. 27212 Whosoever is not with me is against me; and whosoever gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. 28213 For this reason I say unto you, that all sins and blasphemies with which men blaspheme shall be forgiven them: 29214 but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, there is no forgiveness for him for ever, but he is deserving of eternal punishment: 30215 because they said that he had an unclean spirit. 31216 And he said also, Every one that speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come. 32217 Either ye must make a good tree¹⁷⁶ and its fruit good; or ye must make an evil tree¹⁷⁷ and its fruit evil: for the tree is known by its fruit. 33220 Ye children of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? from the overflowings of the heart the mouth speaketh. 34221 The good man from the good treasures which are in his heart bringeth forth good things; and the wicked man from the evil treasures which are in his heart bringeth forth evils. 35222 I say unto you, that every idle word which men shall speak, they shall give an answer for in the day of judgement: 36223 for by thy sayings thou shalt be justified, and by thy sayings thou shalt be judged.

37224 And he said to the multitudes, When ye see the clouds appear from the west, straightway ye say that there cometh rain; and so it cometh to pass. 38225 And when the south wind bloweth, ye say that there will be heat; and it cometh to pass. 39226 And when the evening is come, ye say, It will be fair weather, for the heaven has become red. 40227 And in the morning ye say, To-day there will be severe weather, for the redness of the heaven is paling. Ye hypocrites, ye know to examine the face of the heaven and the earth; but the signs of this time ye know not to discern. 41228 Then they brought to him one possessed of a demon, dumb and blind; and he healed him, so that the dumb and blind began to speak and see. 42229 And all the multitudes wondered, and said, Is this, think you, the son of David?

43230 And he said unto them, Come, let us go into the desert alone, and rest yea little. And many were going and returning, and they had not leisure, not even to eat bread.

45231 And after that, there came to him one of the Pharisees, and besought him that he would eat bread with him. And he entered into the house of that Pharisee, and reclined. 46232 And there was in that city a woman that was a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting in the house of that Pharisee, she took a box of sweet ointment, and stood behind him, 47233 towards his feet, weeping, and began to wet his feet with her tears, and to wipe them with the hair of her head, and to kiss his feet, and anoint them with the sweet ointment. 48234 And when that¹⁷⁸ Pharisee saw it, who invited him, he thought within himself, and said, This man, if he were a prophet, would know who she is and what is her history: for the woman which touched him was a sinner.

Section XV.

1236 Jesus answered and said unto him, Simon, I have something to say unto thee. And he said unto him, Say on, my Master. 2237 Jesus said unto him, There were two debtors to one creditor; and one of them owed five hundred pence, and the other owed fifty pence. 3238 And because they had not wherewith to pay, he forgave them both. 4239 Which of them ought to love him more? Simon answered and said, I suppose, he to whom he forgave most. Jesus said unto him, Thou hast judged rightly. 5240 And he turned to that woman, and said to Simon, Dost thou see this woman? I entered into thy dwelling, and thou gavest me not water to wash my feet: but this woman hath bathed¹⁷⁹ my feet with her tears, and dried them with her hair. 6242 And thou

kissedst me not: but this woman, since she¹⁸⁰ entered, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. 7244 And thou anointedst not my head with oil: 8245 but this woman hath anointed my feet with sweet ointment.¹⁸¹ 9247 And for this, I say unto thee, Her many sins are forgiven her, because she loved much; for he to whom little is forgiven loveth little. 10248 And he said unto that woman, Thy sins are forgiven thee. And those that were invited began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? 11249 And Jesus said to that woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

12250 And many believed in him when they saw the signs which he was doing. 13251 But Jesus did not trust¹⁸² himself to them, 14253 for he knew every man, and he needed not any man to testify to him concerning every man; for he knew what was in man.

15254 And after that, Jesus set apart from his disciples other seventy, and sent them two and two before his face to every region and city whither he was purposing to go. 16255 And he said unto them, The harvest is abundant, and the labourers are few: 170 entreat now the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest. Go ye: and lo, I am sending you as lambs among wolves. 181 Take not with you purses, nor a wallet, nor shoes; neither salute any man in the way. 192 And whatsoever house ye enter, first salute that house: 203 and if there be there a son of peace, let your peace rest upon him; but if there be not, your peace shall return to you. 214 And be ye in that house eating and drinking what they have:¹⁸³ for the labourer is worthy of his hire. 226 And remove not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat what is presented to you: 237 and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come near unto you. 248 But whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go out into the market, and say, 259 Even the dust that clave to our feet from your city, we shake off against you; but know¹⁸⁴ this,¹⁸⁵ that the kingdom of God is come near unto you. 2612 I say unto you, that for Sodom there shall be quiet in the day of judgement, but there shall not be for that city. 2713 Then began Jesus to rebuke the cities in which there had been many mighty works,¹⁸⁶ and they repented not. 2815 And he said, Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! if there had been in Tyre and Sidon the signs which were in thee, it may be that they would have repented in sackcloth and ashes. 2916 Howbeit I say unto you, that for Tyre and Sidon there shall be rest in the day of judgement, more than for you. 3017 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt sink down unto Hades; for if there had been in Sodom the wonders¹⁸⁷ which were in thee, it would have remained until this day. 3119 And now I say unto thee, that for the land of Sodom there shall be quiet in the day of judgement, more than for thee.

3220 And he said again unto his apostles, Whosoever heareth you heareth me; and whosoever heareth me heareth him that sent me: and whosoever wrongeth¹⁸⁸ you wrongeth me; and whosoever wrongeth me wrongeth him that sent me.

3322 And those seventy returned with great joy, and said unto him, Our Lord, even the devils also are subject unto us in thy name. 3423 He said unto them, I beheld Satan¹⁸⁹ fallen like lightning from heaven. 3525 Behold, I am giving you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and the whole race¹⁹⁰ of the enemy; and nothing shall hurt you. 3627 Only ye must not rejoice that the devils are subject unto you; but be glad that your names are written in heaven.

3728 And in that hour Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, I acknowledge thee, my Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto children: yea, my Father; so was thy will. 3829 And he turned to his disciples,¹⁹¹ and said unto them, Everything hath been delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son, and to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him. 3931 Come unto me, all of you, ye that are wearied and bearers of burdens, and I will give you rest. 4032 Bear my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for¹⁹² I am gentle and lowly in my heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 4134 For my yoke is pleasant, and my burden is light.

4235 And while great multitudes were going with him, he turned, and said unto them, 4336 Whosoever cometh unto me, and hateth not his father, and his mother, and his brethren, and his sisters, and his wife, and his children, and himself¹⁹³ also, cannot be a disciple to me. 4438 And whosoever doth not take his cross, and follow me, cannot be a disciple to me. 4539 Which of you desireth to build a tower, and doth not sit down first and reckon his expenses and whether he hath enough to complete it?¹⁹⁴ lest when he hath laid the foundations, 4641 and is not able to finish, all that behold him¹⁹⁵ laugh at him, and say, 4743 This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 4844 Or what king goeth to the battle to fight with another king,¹⁹⁶ and doth not consider first whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh to him with twenty thousand? 4946 And if he is not able, he sendeth unto him while he is afar off, and seeketh peace. 5047 So shall¹⁹⁷ every man of you consider, that desireth to be a disciple to me; for if he renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be a disciple to me.

Section XVI.

149 Then answered certain of the scribes and Pharisees, that they might tempt him, and said, Teacher, we desire to see a sign from thee. 250 He answered and said, This evil and adulterous generation¹⁹⁸ seeketh a sign; and it shall not be given a sign, except the sign of Jonah the prophet. 352 And as Jonah was a sign to the inhabitants of Nineveh, so shall the Son of man also be to this generation. 453 And as Jonah was in the belly of the great fish three days and three nights, so shall the Son of man be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. 554 The queen of the south shall rise in the judgement with the people of this generation, and condemn¹⁹⁹ them: for she came from the ends of the earth that she might hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, here is a better than Solomon. 656 The men of Nineveh shall stand in the judgement with this generation, and condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, here is a greater than Jonah. 757 The unclean spirit, when he goeth out of the man, departeth, and goeth about through places wherein are no waters, that he may find rest for himself; and when he findeth it not, he saith, I will return to my house whence I came out. 858 And if he come and find it adorned and set in order, ⁹⁵⁹ then he goeth, and associateth with himself seven other spirits worse than himself; and they enter and dwell in it: and the end of that man shall be worse than his beginning. 1060 Thus shall it be unto this evil generation.

1161 And while he was saying that, a woman from the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts that nursed thee. 1262 But he said unto her, Blessed is he that heareth the word of God, and keepeth it.

1363 And while he was speaking unto the multitude, there came unto him his mother and his brethren, 1464 and sought to speak with him; and they were not able, because of the multitude; and they stood without and sent, calling him unto them. 1565 A man said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren are standing without, and seek to speak with thee. 1666 But he answered unto him that spake unto him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? 1767 And he beckoned with his hand, stretching it out towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother! and behold, my brethren! 1868 And every man that shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven is my brother, and my sister, and my mother.

1969 And after that, Jesus was going about in the cities and in the villages, and proclaiming and preaching the kingdom of God, and his²⁰⁰ twelve with him, and the women which had been healed of diseases and of evil spirits, 2071 Mary that was called Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven devils, 2172 and Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who were ministering to them of their substance.

2273 And after that, Jesus went out of the house, and sat on the sea shore. And there gathered unto him great multitudes. 2374 And when the press of the people was great upon him, he went up and sat in the boat; and all the multitude was standing on the shore of the sea. 2475 And he spake to them much in parables, and said, The sower went forth to sow: and when he sowed, 2576 some fell on the beaten highway; and it was trodden upon, and the birds ate it. 2677 And other fell on the rocks: and some, where there was not much earth; and straightway it sprang up, because it had no depth in the earth: 2778 and when the sun rose, it withered; and because it had no root, it dried up. 2879 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it; and it yielded no fruit. 2980 And other fell into excellent and good²⁰¹ ground; and it came up, and grew, and brought forth fruit, some thirty, and some sixty, and some a hundred. 3082 And when he said that, he cried, He that hath ears that hear, let him hear. 3183 And when they were alone, his disciples came, and asked him, and said unto him, 3284 What is this parable? and why spakest thou unto them in parables? He answered and said unto them, Unto you is given the knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom of God; but it is not given unto them that are without. 3385 He that hath shall be given unto, and there shall be added; and he that hath not, that which he hath shall be taken from him also. 3486 For this cause therefore I speak unto them in parables; because they see, and see not; and hear, and hear not, nor understand. 3587 And in them is being fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, who said, Hearing they shall hear, and shall not understand; And seeing they shall see, and shall not perceive:

3688 The heart of this people is waxed gross, And their hearing with their ears is become heavy, And they have closed their eyes;

Lest they should see with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their hearts, And should return, And I should heal them.

3789 But ye, blessed are your eyes, which see; and your ears, which hear. 3890 Blessed are the eyes which see what ye see. 3991 Verily I say unto you, Many of the prophets and the righteous longed to see what ye see, and saw not; and to hear what ye hear, and heard not. 4092 When ye know not this parable, how shall ye know all parables? 4193 Hear ye the parable of the sower. 4294 The sower which sowed, sowed the word of God. 4395 Every one who heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, the evil one cometh and snatcheth away the word that hath

been sown in his heart: and this is that which was sown on the middle of the highway. 4496 But that which was sown on the rocks is he that heareth the word, and straightway receiveth it with joy; only, 4597 it hath no root in his soul, but his belief in it is for a time; 4698 and whenever there is distress or persecution because of a word, he stumbleth quickly. 47101 And that which was sown among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the error of riches, and the rest of the other lusts enter, and choke the word, and it becometh without fruit. 48102 And that which was sown in good ground is he that heareth my word in a pure and good heart, and understandeth it, and holdeth to it, and bringeth forth fruit with patience, and produceth either a hundredfold or sixtyfold or thirty.

49103 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, like a man who casteth seed into the earth, and sleepeth and riseth by night and day, 50104 and the seed groweth and cometh up, whence he knoweth not. 51106 And the earth bringeth it to the fruit; and first it will be blade, and after it ear, and at last perfect wheat in the ear: 52107 and whenever the fruit ripeneth, he bringeth immediately the sickle, for the harvest hath come.

Section XVII.

1109 And he set forth to them another parable, and said, The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; 2110 but when men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went away. 3111 And when the blade sprang up and brought forth fruit, there were noticed the tares also. 4112 And the servants of the master of the house came, and said unto him, Our lord, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence are there tares in it? 5113 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. His servants said unto him, Wilt thou that we go and separate it? 6114 He said unto them, Perhaps, when ye separate the tares, ye would root up with them wheat also. 7116 Leave them to grow both together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say unto the reapers, Separate the tares first, and bind them in bundles to be burned with fire; and gather the wheat into my barns.

8117 And he set forth to them another parable, and said, 9118 To what is the kingdom of God like? and to what shall I liken it? 10119 and in what parable shall I set it forth? 11120 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and planted in his field: and of the number of the things that are sown in the earth it is smaller than all of the things which are sown, which are upon the earth; 12121 but when it is grown, it is greater than all the herbs, and produceth large branches, so that the birds of heaven make their nests in its branches.

13122 And he set forth to them another parable: 14123 To what shall I liken the kingdom of God? 15124 It is like the leaven which a woman took, and kneaded into three measures of flour, until the whole of it was leavened.

16125 And Jesus spake all that to the multitudes by way of parables, according as they were able to hear. 17126 And without parables spake he not unto them; that the saying of the Lord through the prophet might be fulfilled:

I will open my mouth in parables; And I will utter secrets which were before the foundations of the world.

18128 But he explained to his disciples privately everything.

19129 Then Jesus left²⁰⁸ the multitudes, and came to the house. And his disciples came unto him, and said unto him, Explain unto us that parable about the tares and the field. ²⁰¹³¹ He answered and said unto them, He that sowed good seed is the Son of man; ²¹¹³² and the field is the world; and the good seed are the children of the kingdom; ²²¹³³ and the tares are the children of the evil one; and the enemy that sowed them²⁰⁹ is Satan; and the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. ²³¹³⁵ And as the tares are separated and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. ²⁴¹³⁶ The Son of man shall send his angels, and separate from his kingdom all things that injure, ²⁵¹³⁷ and all the doers of iniquity, and they shall cast them into the furnace of fire: and there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ²⁶¹³⁸ Then the righteous shall shine as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Whosoever hath ears that hear, let him hear.

²⁷¹³⁹ And again the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hid in a field: that which a man found and hid; and, for his pleasure in it, went and sold all that he had, and bought that field.

²⁸¹⁴⁰ And again the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a merchant seeking excellent pearls; ²⁹¹⁴¹ and when he found one pearl of great price, he went and sold everything that he had, and bought it.

³⁰¹⁴² And again the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was cast²¹⁰ into the sea, and gathered of every kind: ³¹¹⁴⁴ and when it was filled, they drew it up on to the shore of the sea, and sat down to select; and the good of them they threw into the vessels, and the bad they threw outside. ³²¹⁴⁵ Thus shall it be in the end of the world: the angels shall go forth, ³³¹⁴⁶ and separate the wicked from among the good, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

³⁴¹⁴⁷ Jesus said unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They said unto him, Yea, our Lord. ³⁵¹⁴⁸ He said unto them, Therefore every scribe that becometh a disciple of the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the new and the old.

³⁶¹⁴⁹ And when Jesus had finished all these parables, he removed thence, and came to his city; ³⁷¹⁵⁰ and he taught them in their synagogues, so that they were perplexed. ³⁸¹⁵¹ And when the sabbath came, Jesus began to teach in the synagogue; and many of those that heard marvelled, and said, Whence came these things to this man? ³⁹¹⁵² And many envied him and gave no heed to him, but said, What is this wisdom that is given to this man, that there should happen at his hands such as these mighty works?²¹¹ ⁴⁰¹⁵⁴ Is not this a carpenter, son of a carpenter? and is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? ⁴¹¹⁵⁵ And his sisters, all of them, lo, are they not all with us? ⁴²¹⁵⁶ Whence hath this man all these things? And they were in doubt concerning him. And Jesus knew their opinion, and said unto them, Will ye haply²¹² say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal first thyself: and all that we have heard that thou didst in Capernaum, do here also in thine own city? ⁴³¹⁵⁸ And he said, Verily I say unto you, A prophet is not received in his own city, nor among his brethren: ⁴⁴¹⁵⁹ for a prophet is not despised, save in his own city, and among his own kin, and in his own house. ⁴⁵¹⁶⁰ Verily I say unto you, In the days of Elijah the prophet, there were many widows among the children of Israel, when the heaven held back three years and six months, ⁴⁶¹⁶¹ and there was a great famine in all the land; and Elijah was not sent to one of them, save to Zarephath of Sidon, to a woman that was a widow. ⁴⁷¹⁶² And many lepers were among the children of Israel in the days

of Elisha the prophet; but not one of them was cleansed, save Naaman the Nabathaeon.²¹³
48164 And he was not able to do there many mighty works,²¹⁴ because of their unbelief; except
that he laid his hand upon a few of the sick, and healed them. 49166 And he marvelled at their lack
of faith. 50167 And when those who were in the synagogue heard, they were all filled with wrath;
and they rose up, 51168 and brought him forth outside the city, and brought him to the brow of the
hill upon which their city was built, that they might cast him from its summit: 52169 but he passed
through among them and went away.

53170 And he went about in the villages which were around Nazareth, and taught in their
synagogues.

Section XVIII.

1171 At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, and all the things which came to
pass at his hand; and he marvelled, for he had obtained excellent information concerning him.²¹⁵
2173 And some men said that John the Baptist was risen from among the dead; 3174 and²¹⁶
others said that Elijah had appeared; and others, Jeremiah; and others, that a prophet of the old
prophets was risen; 4176and others said that he was a prophet like one of the prophets. 5177
Herod said to his servants, This is John the Baptist, he whom I beheaded; he is risen from among
the dead: therefore mighty works result from him. 6178 For Herod himself had sent and taken
John, and cast him into prison, for the sake of Herodias his brother Philip's wife, whom he had
taken. 7179 And John said to Herod, Thou hast no authority to take the wife of thy brother. 8180
And Herodias avoided him and wished to kill him; and she could not. 9181 But Herod feared John,
for he knew that he was a righteous man and a holy; and he guarded him, and heard him much,
and did, and obeyed him with gladness. 10182 And he wished to kill him; but he feared the people,
for they adhered to him as the prophet. 11183 And there was a celebrated day, and Herod had
made a feast for his great men on the day of his anniversary,²¹⁷ and for the officers and for the
chief men of Galilee. 12185 And the daughter of Herodias came in and danced in the midst of the
company, and pleased Herod and those that sat with him. And the king said to the damsel, Ask of
me what thou wilt, and I will give it thee. 13186 And he swore unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask,
I will give it thee, to the half of my kingdom. 14187 And she went out, and said unto her mother,
What shall I ask him?²¹⁸ She said unto her, The head of John the Baptist. 15189 And immediately
she came in hastily to the king, and said unto him, I desire in this hour that thou give me on a dish
the head of John the Baptist. 16190 And the king was exceeding sorry; but because of the oath
and the guests he did not wish to refuse her. 17191 But immediately the king sent an executioner,
and commanded that he should bring the head of John: and he went and cut off the head of John
in the prison, 18192 and brought it on a dish, and delivered it to the damsel; and the damsel gave
it to her mother. 19193 And his disciples heard, and came and took his body, and buffed it. And
they came and told²¹⁹ Jesus what had happened. 20195 And for this cause Herod said, I
beheaded John: who is this, of whom I hear these things. And he desired to see him. 21196 And
Jesus, when he heard, removed thence in a boat to a waste place alone, to the other side of the
sea of the Galilee of Tiberias.²²⁰

22198 And many saw them going, and knew them, and hastened by land²²¹ from all the cities,
and came thither beforehand; for they saw the signs which he was doing on the sick. 23200 And
Jesus went up into the mountain, and sat there with his disciples. 24201 And the feast of the

passover of the Jews was near. 25202 And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and saw great multitudes coming to him. And he was moved with compassion for them, for they were like sheep that were without a shepherd. 26203 And he received them, and spake to them concerning the kingdom of God, and healed those who had need of healing. 27204 And when the evening approached,222 his disciples came to him, and said unto him, 28206 The place is desert, and the time is past; send away the multitudes of the people,223 that they may go to the towns and villages which are around us, and buy for themselves bread; for they have nothing to eat. 29208 But he said unto them, They have no need to go away; give ye them what may be eaten. 30209 They said unto him, We have not here enough. He said unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? 31210 And he said that proving him; and he knew what he was resolved to do. 32211 Philip said unto him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread would not suffice them after224 every one of them hath taken a small amount. 33213 One of his disciples said unto him (namely, Andrew the brother of Simon Cephas), 34214 Here is a lad having five loaves of barley and two fishes: 35215 but this amount, what is it for all these? But wilt thou that we go and buy for all the people what may be eaten? for we have no more than these five loaves and the two fishes. 36216 And the grass was plentiful in that place. Jesus said unto them, Arrange all the people that they may sit down on the grass, fifty people in a company. 37217 And the disciples did so. And all the people sat down by companies, by hundreds and fifties. 38218 Then Jesus said unto them, Bring hither those five loaves and the two fishes. 39219 And when they brought him that, Jesus took the bread and the fish, and looked to heaven, and blessed, and divided, and gave to his disciples to set before them; 40220 and the disciples set for the multitudes the bread and the fish; and they ate, all of them, and were satisfied. 41221 And when they were satisfied, he said unto his disciples, Gather the fragments that remain over, that nothing be lost. 42222 And they gathered, and filled twelve baskets with fragments, being those that remained over from those which ate of the five barley loaves and the two fishes. 43223 And those people who ate were five thousand, besides the women and children. 44224 And straightway he pressed his disciples to go up into the ship, and that they should go before him unto the other side to Bethsaida, while he himself should send away the multitudes. 45225 And those people who saw the sign which Jesus did, said, Of a truth this is a prophet who hath come into the world. 46226 And Jesus knew their purpose to come and take him, and make him a king; and he left them, and went up into the mountain alone for prayer.

47227 And when the nightfall was near, his disciples went down unto the sea, and sat225 in a boat, and came to the side of Capernaum. 48229 And the darkness came on, and Jesus had not come to them. 49230 And the sea was stirred up against them by reason of a violent wind that blew. 50231 And the boat was distant from the land many furlongs, and they were much damaged by the waves, and the wind was against them.

Section XIX.

1232 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus came unto them, walking upon the 2233 water, after they had rowed226 with difficulty about twenty-five or thirty furlongs. 3235 And when he drew near unto their boat, his disciples saw him walking on the water; 4236 and they were troubled, and supposed that it was a false appearance; and they cried out from their fear. 5237 But Jesus straightway spoke unto them, and said, Take courage, for it is I; fear not. 6238 Then Cephas answered and said unto him, My Lord, if it be thou, bid me to come unto thee on the water. 7239 And Jesus said unto him, Come. And Cephas went down out of the boat, and walked on the water

to come unto Jesus. But when he saw the wind strong, he feared, and was on the point of sinking; and he lifted up his voice, and said, My Lord, save me. 8240 And immediately our Lord stretched out his hand and took hold of him, and said unto him, Thou of little faith, why didst thou doubt? 9241 And when Jesus came near, he went up unto them into the boat, he and Simon, and immediately the wind ceased. 10242 And those that were in the ship came and worshipped him, and said, Truly thou art the Son of God. 11243 And straightway that ship arrived at the land which they made for. 12244 And when they came out of the ship to the land, they marvelled greatly and were perplexed in themselves: 13245 and they had not understood by means of²²⁷ that bread, because their heart was gross.

14247 And when the people of that region knew of the arrival of Jesus, they made haste in all that land, and began to bring those that were diseased,²²⁸ borne in their beds to the place where they heard that he was. 15249 And wheresoever the place might be which he entered, of the villages or the cities, they laid the sick in the markets, and sought of him that they might touch²²⁹ were it only the edge of his garment: and all that touched²³⁰ him were healed and lived.²³¹

16253 And on the day after that, the multitude which was standing on the shore of the sea saw that there was there no other ship save that into which the disciples had gone up, 17254 and that Jesus went not up into the ship with his disciples (but there were other ships from Tiberias near²³² the place where they ate the bread when Jesus blessed it): 180 and when that multitude saw that Jesus was not there, nor yet his disciples, they went up into those ships, and came to Capernaum, and sought Jesus. 191 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Our Master, when camest thou hither? Jesus answered and said unto them, 202 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye have not sought me because of²³³ your seeing the signs, but because of your eating the bread and being satisfied. 214 Serve not the food which perisheth, but the food which abideth in eternal life,²³⁴ which the Son of man will give unto you: him²³⁵ hath God the Father sealed. 227 They said unto him, What shall we do that we may work the work of God? 238 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe in him whom he hath sent. 249 They said unto him, What sign hast thou done, that we may see, and believe in thee? what hast thou wrought? 2510 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it was written, Bread from heaven gave he them to eat. 2611 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not bread from heaven; but my Father gave²³⁶ you the bread of truth²³⁷ from heaven. 2714 The bread of God is that which came down from heaven and gave the world life. 2815 They said unto him, Our Lord, give us at all times this bread. 2916 Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: whosoever cometh unto me shall not hunger, and whosoever believeth in me shall not thirst for ever. 3017 But I said unto you, Ye have seen me, and have not believed. 3118 And all that my Father hath given to me cometh unto me; and whosoever cometh unto me I shall not cast him forth without. 3219 I came down from heaven, not to do my own will, but to do the will of him that sent me; 3320 and this is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing of that which he gave me, but raise it up in the last day. 3421 This is the will of my Father, that every one that seeth the Son, and believeth in him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up in the last day.

3522 The Jews therefore murmured against him because of his saying, I am the bread which came down from heaven. 3623 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? then how saith this man, I came down from heaven? 3724 Jesus answered

and said unto them, Murmur not one with another. 3825 No man is able to come unto me, except the Father which sent me draw him; and I will raise him up in the last day. 3926 It is written in the prophet, They shall all be the taught of God. Every one who heareth from the Father now,²³⁸ and learneth of him, cometh unto me. 4028 No man now seeth the Father; but he that is from God, he it is that seeth the Father. 4129 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever believeth in me hath eternal life. 4230 I am the bread of life. 4331 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and they died. 4432 This is the bread which came down from heaven, that a man may eat of it, and not die. 4533 I am the bread of life which came down from heaven: and if a man eat of this bread he shall live for ever: and the bread which I shall give is my body, which I give for the life of the world.

4634 The Jews therefore quarrelled one with another, and said, How can he give us his body that we may eat it? 4735 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye do not eat the body of the Son of man and drink his blood, ye shall not have life in yourselves. 4836 Whosoever eateth of my body and drinketh of my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up in the last day. 4937 My body truly is meat,²³⁹ and my blood truly is drink.²⁴⁰ 5040 Whosoever eateth my body and drinketh my blood abideth in me, and I in him-⁵¹⁴¹ as the living Father sent me, and I am alive because of the Father; and whosoever eateth me, he also shall live because of me. 5242 This is the bread which came down from heaven: and not according as your fathers ate the manna, and died: whosoever eateth of this bread shall live for ever. 5343 This he said in the synagogue, when he was teaching in Capernaum. 5444 And many of his disciples, when they heard, said, This word is hard; who is he that can hear it?

Section XX.

145 And Jesus knew within himself that his disciples were murmuring because of a that, and he said unto them, Doth this trouble you? 246 What if ye should see the Son of man then ascend to the place where he was of old? 347 It is the spirit that quickeneth, and the body profiteth nothing: the words²⁴¹ that I speak unto you are spirit and life. 449 But there are some of you that do not believe. And Jesus knew beforehand who they were who should²⁴² not believe, and who it was that should betray him. 551 And he said unto them, Therefore I said unto you, No man can come unto me, if that hath not been given him by the Father.

652 And because of this word many of his disciples turned back and walked not with him. 753 And Jesus said unto the twelve, Do ye haply also wish to go away? 854 Simon Cephas answered and said, My Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. 955 And we have believed and known that thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. 1056 Jesus said unto them, Did not I choose you, ye company of the twelve, and of you one is a devil? 1157 He said that because of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot; for he, being of the twelve, was purposed to²⁴³ betray him.

1259 And while he was speaking, one of the Pharisees came asking of him that he would eat with him: and he went in, and reclined to meat. 1360 And that Pharisee, when he saw it,²⁴⁴ marvelled that he had not first cleansed himself before his eating. 1462 Jesus said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees wash the outside of the cup and the dish, and ye think that ye are cleansed; but your inside is full of injustice and wickedness.

1563 Ye of little mind, did not he that made the outside make the inside? 1664 Now give what ye have²⁴⁵ in alms, and everything shall be clean unto you.

1766 And there came to him Pharisees and scribes, come from Jerusalem. 1867 And when they saw some of his disciples eating bread while they had not washed their hands, they found fault. 1968 For all of the Jews and the Pharisees, if they wash not their hands thoroughly, 2069 eat not; for they held²⁴⁶ to the ordinance²⁴⁷ of the elders. And they ate not what was bought from the market, except they washed it; and many other things did they keep of what they had received, such as the washing of cups, and measures, and vessels of brass, and couches. 2172 And scribes²⁴⁸ and Pharisees asked him, Why do thy disciples not walk according to the ordinances of the elders, but eat bread without washing their hands? 2274 Jesus answered and said unto them, Why do ye also overstep the command of God by reason of your ordinance? 2375 God said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whosoever revileth his father and his mother shall surely die. 2476 But ye say, If a man say to his father or to his mother, What thou receivest²⁴⁹ from me is an offering,⁻²⁵⁷⁸ and ye²⁵⁰ suffer him not to do anything for his father or his mother; 2680 and ye²⁵¹ make void and reject the word of God by reason of the ordinance that ye have ordained and commanded, such as the washing of cups and measures, and what resembles that ye do much. 2782 And ye forsook the command of God, and held to the ordinance of men. 2883 Do²⁵² ye well to wrong²⁵³ the command of God in order that ye may establish your ordinance? 2986 Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah the prophet prophesy concerning you, and say, 3087 This people honoureth me with its²⁵⁴ lips; But their heart is very far from me.

3189 But in vain do they fear me, In that they teach the commands of men.

3290 And Jesus called all the multitude, and said unto them. Hear me, all of you, and understand: 3391 nothing without the man, which then enters him, is able to defile him; but what goeth out of him, that it is which defileth the man. 3492 He that hath ears that hear, let him hear. 3593 Then his disciples drew near, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees which heard this word were angry? 3694 He answered and said unto them, Every plant which my Father which is in heaven planted not shall be uprooted. 3795 Let them alone; for they are blind leading blind. And if the blind lead²⁵⁵ the blind, both of them shall fall into a hollow.

3897 And when Jesus entered the house from the multitude, Simon Cephas asked him, and said unto him, My Lord, explain to us that parable. 3998 He said unto them, Do ye also thus not understand? Know ye not that everything that entereth into the man from without cannot defile him; 4099 because it entereth not into his heart; it entereth into his stomach only, and thence is cast forth in the cleansing which maketh clean all the food?²⁵⁶ 41101 The thing which goeth forth from the mouth of the man proceedeth from his heart, and it is that which defileth the man. 42102 From within²⁵⁷ the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, 43104 fornication, adultery, theft, false witness, murder, injustice, wickedness, deceit, stupidity, evil eye, calumny, pride, foolishness: 44105 these evils all of them from within proceed from the heart, and they are the things which defile the man: 45106 but if a man eat while he washeth not his hands, he is not defiled.

46107 And Jesus went out thence, and came to the borders of Tyre and Sidon. And he entered into a certain house, and desired that no man should know it;²⁵⁸ and he could not be hid. 47109 But straightway a Canaanitish woman, whose daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him. 48110 And that woman was a Gentile of Emesa of Syria. 49111 And she came out after him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy upon me, my Lord, thou son of David; for my daughter is seized in an evil way by Satan.²⁵⁹ 50113 And he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought

him, and said, Send her away: for she crieth after us. 51114 He answered and said unto them, I was not sent except to the sheep that are gone astray of the house of Israel. 52115 But she came and worshipped him, and said, My Lord, help me, have mercy upon me.

53116 Jesus said unto her, It is not seemly that the children's bread should be taken and thrown to the dogs. But she said, 54117 Yea, my Lord: the dogs also eat of the crumbs that fall from their masters' tables, and live. 55118 Then said Jesus unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: it shall be unto thee as thou hast desired. 56119 Go then thy way; and because of this word, the devil is gone out of thy daughter. 57120 And her daughter was healed in that hour. 58121 And that woman went away to her house, and found her daughter laid upon the bed, and the devil gone out of her.

Section XXI.

1122 And Jesus went out again from the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and came to the sea of Galilee, towards the borders of Decapolis. 2123 And they brought unto him one dumb and deaf, and entreated him that he would lay his hand upon him and heal him. 3124 And he drew him away from the multitude, and went away alone, and spat upon his fingers, and thrust them into his ears, and touched his tongue; 4125 and looked to heaven, and sighed, and said unto him, Be opened. 5126 And in that hour his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed, and he spake with ease. 6127 And Jesus charged them much that they should not tell this to any man: but the more he charged them, the more they increased in publishing, and marvelled much, and said, 7128 This man doeth everything well: he made the deaf to hear, and those that lacked speech to speak.

8129 And while he was passing through the land of Samaria, he came to one of the cities of the Samaritans, called Sychar, 9130 beside the field which Jacob gave to Joseph to his son. 10131 And there was there a spring of water of Jacob's. And Jesus was fatigued from the exertion of the way, and sat at the spring. And the time was about the sixth hour.²⁶⁰ 11133 And a woman of Samaria came to draw water; and Jesus said unto her, Give me water, that I may drink. 12134 And Iris disciples had entered into the city to buy for themselves food. 13135 And that Samaritan woman said unto him, How dost thou, being a Jew, ask me to give thee to drink, while I am a Samaritan woman? 14136 (And the Jews mingle not with the Samaritans.²⁶¹) Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who this is that said unto thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest ask him, and he would give thee the water of life. 15138 That woman said unto him, My Lord, thou hast no bucket, and the well is deep: from whence hast thou the water of life? 16139 Can it be that thou art greater than our father Jacob, who gave us this well, and drank from it, and his children, and his sheep? 17140 Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drinketh of this water shall thirst again: 18141 but whosoever drinketh of the water which I shall give him shall not thirst for ever: but the water which I shall give him shall be in him a spring of water springing up unto eternal life. 19142 That woman said unto him, My Lord, give me of this water, that I may not thirst again, neither come and draw water from here. 20143 Jesus said unto her, Go and call thy husband, and come hither. 21144 She said unto him, I have no husband. 22145 Jesus said unto her, Thou saidst well, I have no husband: five husbands hast thou had, and this man whom thou hast now is not thy husband; and in this thou saidst truly. 23146 That woman said unto him, My Lord, I perceive thee to be a prophet. 24147 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say that in Jerusalem is the place in which worship must be. 25148 Jesus said

unto her, Woman, believe me, an hour cometh, when neither in this mountain, nor yet in Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father. 26149 Ye worship that which ye know not: but we worship that which we know: for salvation is of the Jews. 27150 But an hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth: and the Father also seeketh such as these worshippers. 28151 For God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. 29152 That woman said unto him, I know that the Messiah cometh: 30153 and when he is come, he will teach us everything. Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

31154 And while he was speaking, his disciples came; and they wondered how he would speak²⁶² with a woman; but not one of them said unto him, What seekest thou? or, 32156 What²⁶³ speakest thou with her? And the woman left her waterpot, and went to the city, and said to the people, 33158 Come, and see a man who told me all that ever I did: perhaps then he is the Messiah. 34159 And people went out from the city, and came to him. 35160 And in the mean while his disciples besought him, and said unto him, Our master, eat. 36161 And he said unto them, I have food to eat that ye know not. 37162 And the disciples said amongst themselves, Can any one have brought him aught to eat?²⁶⁴ 38164 Jesus said unto them, My food is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work. 39165 Said ye not that after four months cometh the harvest? behold, I therefore say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and behold the lands, that they have become white, and the harvest is already come.²⁶⁵ 40167 And he that reapeth receiveth his wages, and gathereth the fruit of eternal life;²⁶⁶ and the sower and the reaper rejoice together. 41169 For in this is found the word of truth, One soweth, and another reapeth. 42170 And I sent you to reap that in which ye have not laboured: others laboured, and ye have entered on their labour.

43171 And from that city many of the Samaritans believed in him because of the words of that woman, who testified and said, He told me all that ever I did. 44172 And when those Samaritans came unto him, they besought him to abide with them; and he abode with them two days. 45173 And many believed in him because of his word; 46174 and they said to that woman, Now not because of thy saying have we believed in him: we have heard and known that this truly is the Messiah, the Saviour of the world.

47175 And after two days Jesus went out thence and departed to Galilee. 48176 And Jesus testified that a prophet is not honoured in his own city. 49177 And when he came to Galilee, the Galilaeans received him.

Section XXII.

1178 And when Jesus came to a certain village, there drew near to him a leper, and fell at his feet, and besought him, and said unto him, If thou wilt, thou art able to cleanse me. 2179 And Jesus had mercy upon him, and stretched forth his hand, and touched him, and said, I will cleanse²⁶⁷ thee. 3181 And immediately his leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed. 4182 And he sternly charged him, and sent him out, and said unto him, 5183 See that thou tell not any man: but go and shew thy- self to the priests, and offer an offering for thy cleansing as Moses commanded for their testimony. 6184 But he, when he went out, began to publish much, and spread abroad the news, so that Jesus could not enter into any of the cities openly, for the extent to which the report of him spread, but he remained without in a desert place. 7185 And much people came unto him from one place and another,²⁶⁸ to hear his word, and that they might be healed of their pains.

8187 And he used to withdraw from them into the desert, and pray.

9188 And after that, was the feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

10189 And there was in Jerusalem a place prepared for bathing,²⁶⁹ which was called in Hebrew the House of Mercy, having five porches. 11191 And there were laid in them much people of the sick, and blind, and lame, and paralysed, waiting for the moving of the water. 12192 And the angel from time to time went down into the place of bathing,²⁷⁰ and moved the water; and the first that went down after the moving of the water, every pain that he had was healed. 13194 And a man was there who had a disease for thirty-eight years. 14195 And Jesus saw this man laid, and knew²⁷¹ that he had been thus a long time; and he said unto him, Wouldest thou be made whole? 15197 That diseased one answered and said, Yea, my Lord, I have no man, when the water moveth, to put me into the bathing-place; but when I come, another goeth down before me. 16198 Jesus said unto him, Rise, take thy bed, and walk. 17199 And immediately that man was healed; and he rose, and carried his bed, and walked.

18200 And that day was a sabbath. And when the Jews saw that healed one, they²⁷² said unto him, It is a sabbath: thou hast no authority to carry thy bed. 19202 And he answered and said unto them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take thy bed, and walk. 20203 They asked him therefore, Who is this man that said unto thee, Take thy bed, and walk? 21204 But he that was healed knew not who it was; for Jesus had removed from that place to another, because of the press of the great multitude which was in that place. 22205 And after two days Jesus happened upon him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art whole: sin not again, lest there come upon thee what is worse than the first. 23206 And that man went, and said to the Jews that it was Jesus that had healed him. 24207 And because of that the Jews persecuted Jesus and sought to kill him, because he was doing this on the sabbath. 25208 And Jesus said unto them, My Father worketh until now, and I also work. 26209 And because of this especially the Jews sought to kill him, not because he profaned the sabbath only; but for his saying also that God was his Father, and his making himself equal with God. 27210 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son cannot do anything of himself, but what he seeth the Father do; what the Father doeth, that the Son also doeth like him. 28211 The Father loveth his Son, and everything that he doeth he sheweth him: and more than these works will he shew him, that ye may marvel. 29212 And as the Father raiseth the dead and giveth them life, so the Son also giveth life to whomsoever he will. 30213 And the Father judgeth no man, but hath given all judgement unto the Son; that every man may honour the Son, as he honoureth the Father. 31214 And he that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which sent him. 32215 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever heareth my word, and believeth in him that sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgement, but passeth from death unto life. 33216 Verily, verily, I say unto you, An hour shall come, and now is also, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and those which hear shall live. 34217 And as the Father hath life in himself,²⁷³ likewise he gave to the Son also that he might have life in himself,²⁷⁴ 35220 and authority to do judgement also, because²⁷⁵ he is the Son of man. 36222 Marvel not then at that: I mean the coming of the hour when all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth: 37223 those that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and those that have done evil deeds, to the resurrection of judgement.

38224 I am not able of myself to do anything; but as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; I seek not my own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39225 I276 bear witness of myself, and so a my witness is not true. 40227 It is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he beareth of me is true. 41228 Ye have sent unto John, and he hath borne witness of the truth. 42229 But not from man do I seek witness; but I say that ye may live.277 43231 That278 was a lamp which shineth and giveth light: and ye were pleased to glory now279 in his light. 44234 But I have witness greater than that of John: the works which my Father hath given me to accomplish, those works which I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. 45235 And the Father which sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his appearance. 46236 And his word abideth not in you; because in him whom he hath sent ye do not believe. 47237 Search the scriptures, in which ye rejoice280 that ye have eternal life; 48239 and they bear witness of me; and ye do not wish to come to me, that ye may have eternal life. 49240 I seek not praise of men. 50241 But I know you, that the love of God is not in you. 51242 I am come in the name of my Father, and ye received me not; but if another come in his own name, that one will ye receive. 52243 And how can ye believe, while ye receive praise one from another, and praise from God, the One, ye seek not? 53244 Can it be that ye think that I will accuse you before the Father? Ye have one that accuseth you, Moses, in whom ye have rejoiced.281 54246 If ye believed Moses, ye would believe me also; Moses wrote of me. 55 And if ye believed not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

Section XXIII.

1247 And Jesus departed thence, and came to the side of the sea of Galilee, and went up into the mountain, and sat there. 2248 And there came unto him great multitudes, having with them lame, and blind, and dumb, and maimed, and many others, and they cast them at the feet of Jesus: 3249 for they had seen all the signs which he did in Jerusalem, when they were gathered at the feast. 4250 And he healed them all. And those multitudes marvelled when they saw dumb men speak, and maimed men healed, and lame men walk, and blind men see; and they praised the God of Israel.

5251 And Jesus called his disciples, and said unto them, I have compassion on this multitude, because of their continuing with me three days, having nothing to eat; and to send them away fasting I am not willing, lest they faint in the way, some of them having come from far. 6252 His disciples said unto him, Whence have we in the desert bread wherewith to satisfy all this multitude? 7253 Jesus said unto them, How many loaves have ye? 8254 They said unto him, Seven, and a few small fishes. And he commanded the multitudes to sit down upon the ground; 9255 and he took those seven loaves and the fish, and blessed, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and the disciples set before the multitudes. 100 And they all ate, and were satisfied: and they took that which remained over of the fragments, seven basketfuls. 111 And the people that ate were four thousand men, besides the women and children. 122 And when the multitudes departed, he went up into the boat, and came to the borders of Magada.282

134 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came to him, and began to seek a discussion with him. And they asked him to shew them a sign from heaven, tempting him. 145 And Jesus sighed within himself, and said, What sign seeketh this evil and adulterous generation? It seeketh a sign, and it shall not be given a sign, except the sign of Jonah the prophet. 156 Verily I say unto you, This

generation shall not be given a sign. 167 And he left²⁸³ them, and went up into the boat, and went away to that side.

179 And his disciples forgot to take with them bread, and there was not with them in the boat, not even²⁸⁴ one loaf. 1811 And Jesus charged them, and said, Take heed, and guard yourselves from the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees, and from the leaven of Herod. 1912 And they reflected within themselves that they had taken with them no bread. 2013 And Jesus knew, and said unto them, Why²⁸⁵ think ye within yourselves, O ye of little faith, and are anxious, because ye have no bread? until now do ye not perceive, neither understand? is your heart yet hard? 2115 And have ye eyes, and yet see not? and have ye ears, and yet hear not? 2216 and do ye not remember when I brake those five loaves for five thousand? and how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye²⁸⁶ up? They said, Twelve. 2318 He said unto them, And the seven also for four thousand: how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye²⁸⁷ up? They said, Seven. 2420 He said unto them, How have ye not understood that I spake not to you because of²⁸⁸ the bread, but that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees? 2522 Then they understood that he spake, not that they should beware of the leaven of the bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees, which he called leaven.

2623 And after that, he came to Bethsaida. And they brought to him a certain²⁸⁹ blind man, and besought him that he would touch him. 2725 And he took the hand of that blind man, and led him out without the village, and spat in his eyes, and laid his hand on him,²⁹⁰ and asked him, What seest thou? 2827 And that blind man looked intently, and said unto him, I see men as trees walking. 2928 And he placed his hand again on his eyes; and they were restored,²⁹¹ and he saw everything clearly. 3030 And he sent him to his house, and said, Do not enter even into the village, nor tell any man in the village.

3131 And Jesus went forth, and his disciples, to the villages of Caesarea Philippi. 3232 And while he was going in the way, and his disciples alone,²⁹² he asked his disciples, and said, What do men say of me that I am, the Son of man?²⁹³ 3335 They said unto him, Some say, John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. 3436 He said unto them, 3537 And ye, what say ye that I am? Simon Cephas answered and said, Thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. 3638 Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon son of Jonah: flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. 3739 And I say unto thee also, that thou art Cephas,²⁹⁴ and on this rock will I build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 3841 To thee will I give the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 3942 And he sternly charged his disciples, and warned them that they should not tell any man concerning him, that he was the Messiah. 4043 And henceforth began Jesus to shew to his disciples that he was determined²⁹⁵ to go to Jerusalem, 4145 and suffer much, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and of the scribes, and be killed, and on the third day rise. 4246 And he was speaking²⁹⁶ plainly. And Simon Cephas, as one grieved for him, said, Far be thou, my Lord, from that. 4348 And he turned, and looked upon his disciples, and rebuked Simon, and said, 4449 Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou art a stumblingblock unto me: for thou thinkest not of what pertains to God, but of what pertains to men.

4550 And Jesus called the multitudes with his disciples, and said unto them, Whosoever would come after me, let him deny himself, and take his cross every day, and come after me. 4651 And whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever loseth his life for my sake, and for the sake of my gospel, shall save it. 4752 What shall a man profit, if he gain all the world, 4853 and destroy²⁹⁷ his own life,²⁹⁸ or lose it? or what will a man give in ransom for his life?²⁹⁹ 4957 Whosoever shall deny me and my sayings in this sinful and adulterous generation, the Son of man also will deny him, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with his holy angels. 5058 For the Son of man is about to³⁰⁰ come in the glory of his Father with his holy angels; and then shall he reward each man according to his works.

Section XXIV.

160 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There be here now some standing that shall not taste death, until they see the kingdom of God come³⁰¹ with strength, and the Son of man who cometh in his kingdom.

262 And after six days Jesus took Simon Cephas, and James, and John his brother, and brought them up into a high mountain, the three of them only. 363 And while they were praying, Jesus changed, and became after the fashion of another person; 464 and his face shone like the sun, and his raiment was very white like the snow, and as the light of lightning, so that nothing on earth can whiten³⁰² like it. 566 And there appeared unto him Moses and Elijah talking to Jesus. 667 And they thought that the time of his decease which was to be accomplished at Jerusalem was come. 768 And Simon and those that were with him were heavy in the drowsiness of steep; and with effort they roused themselves, and saw his glory, and those two men that were standing with him. 869 And when they began to depart from him, Simon said unto Jesus, My Master, it is good for us to be here: 970 and if thou wilt, we will make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah; not knowing what he said, because of the fear which took possession of them. 1071 And while he was yet saying that, a bright cloud overshadowed them. 1172 And when they saw Moses and Elijah that they had entered into that cloud, they feared again. 1273 And a voice was heard out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, whom I have chosen; hear ye therefore him. 1374 And when this voice was heard, Jesus was found alone. 1475 And the disciples, when they heard the voice, fell on their faces from the fear which took hold of them. 1576 And Jesus came and touched them and said, Arise, be not afraid. 1677 And they lifted up their eyes, and saw Jesus as he was.

1778 And when they went down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, and said unto them, Tell not what ye have seen to any man, until the Son of man rise from among the dead. 1879 And they kept the word within themselves, and told no man in those days what they had seen. 1980 And they reflected among themselves, What is this word which he spake unto us, I, when I am risen from among the dead? 2081 And his disciples asked him, and said, What is that which the scribes say, then, that Elijah must first come? 2182 He said unto them, Elijah cometh first to set in order everything, and as it was written of the Son of man, that he should suffer many things, and be rejected. 2283 But I say unto you, that Elijah is come, and they knew him not, and have done unto him whatsoever they desired, as it was written of him. 2384 In like manner the Son of man is to suffer of them. 2485 Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them concerning John the Baptist.

2586 And on that day whereon they came down from the mountain, there met him a multitude of many people standing with his disciples, and the scribes were discussing with them. 2687 And the people, when they saw Jesus, were perplexed,³⁰³ and in the midst of their joy hastened³⁰⁴ and saluted him. 2790 And on that day came certain of the Pharisees, and said unto him, Get thee out, and go hence; for Herod seeketh to kill thee. 2891 Jesus said unto them, Go ye and say to this fox, Behold, I am casting out demons, and I heal to-day and to-morrow, and on the third day I am perfected. 2992 Nevertheless I must be watchful³⁰⁵ to-day and to-morrow, and on the last day I shall depart; for it cannot be that a prophet perish outside of Jerusalem.

3094 And after that, there came to him a man from that multitude, and fell upon his knees, and said unto him, I beseech thee, my Lord, look upon my son; he is my only child: and the spirit cometh upon him suddenly. 3195 A lunacy³⁰⁶ hath come upon him, and he meeteth with evils. 3297 And when it cometh upon him, it beateth him about;³⁰⁷ and he foameth, and gnasheth his teeth, and wasteth;³⁰⁸ 33100 and many times it hath thrown him into the water and into the fire to destroy him, and it hardly leaveth him after bruising him. 34101 And I brought him near to thy disciples, and they could not heal him. 35102 Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, till when shall I be with you? and till when shall I bear with you? bring thy son hither. 36103 And he brought him unto him: and when the spirit saw him, immediately it beat him about; and he fell upon the ground, and was raging and foaming. 37104 And Jesus asked his father, How long is the time during which he hath been thus? He said unto him, From his youth until now. 38105 But, my Lord, help me wherein thou canst, and have mercy upon me. 39106 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe! All things are possible to him that believeth. 40107 And immediately the father of the child cried out, weeping, and said, I believe, my Lord; help my lack of faith. 41108 And when Jesus saw the hastening of the people, and their coming at the sound, he rebuked that unclean spirit, and said to it, Thou dumb³⁰⁹ spirit that speakest not, I command thee,³¹⁰ come out of him, and enter not again into him. 42111 And that spirit, devil,³¹¹ cried out much, and bruised him, and came out; and that child fell as one dead, and many thought that he had died. 43113 But Jesus took him by his hand, and raised him up, and gave him to his father; and that child was healed from that hour. 44114 And the people all marvelled at the greatness of God.

45115 And when Jesus entered into the house, his disciples came, and asked him privately,³¹² and said unto him, Why were we not able to heal him? 46117 Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief. Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Remove hence; and it shall remove; and nothing shall overcome you. 47118 But it is impossible to cast out this kind by anything except by fasting and prayer.

48119 And when he went forth thence, they passed through Galilee: and he would not that any man should know it.³¹³ 49121 And he taught his disciples, and said unto them, 50122 Keep ye these sayings in your ears and your hearts: for the Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, he shall rise on the third day. 51123 But they knew not the word which he spake unto them, for it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it; and they feared to ask him about this word. 52124 And they were exceeding sorrowful.

Section XXV.

1125 And in that day this thought presented itself to his disciples, and they said, which haply should be the greatest among them.³¹⁴ 2127 And when they came to Capernaum, and entered into the house, Jesus said unto them, What were ye considering in the way among yourselves?³¹²⁸ And they were silent because they had considered that matter.

4129 And when Simon went forth without, those that received two dirhams for the tribute came to Cephas, and said unto him, Doth your master not give his two dirhams? He said unto them, Yea.⁵¹³⁰ And when Cephas entered the house, Jesus anticipated him, and said unto him, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive custom and tribute? from their sons, or from strangers? ⁶¹³¹ Simon said unto him, From strangers. Jesus said unto him, Children then are free. Simon said unto him, Yea. Jesus said unto him, Give thou also unto them, like the stranger. ⁷¹³² But, lest it trouble them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook; and the first fish that cometh up, open its mouth, and thou shall find a staler: take therefore that, and give for me and thee.

8133 And in that hour came the disciples to Jesus, and said unto him, Who, thinkest thou, is greater in the kingdom of heaven? ⁹¹³⁴ And Jesus knew the thought of their heart, and called a³¹⁵ child, and set him in the midst, and took him in his arms, and said unto them, ¹⁰¹³⁶ Verily I say unto you, If ye do not return, and become as children, ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven. ¹¹¹³⁷ Every one that shall receive in my name such as this child hath received me: and whosoever receiveth me receiveth not me, but him that sent me. ¹²¹³⁸ And he who is little in your company,³¹⁶ the same shall be great. ¹³¹⁴⁰ But whosoever shall injure one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a great millstone³¹⁷ should be hanged about his neck, and he should be drowned in the depths of the sea.

14142 John answered and said, Our Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we prevented him, because he followed not thee with us. ¹⁵¹⁴³ Jesus said unto them, Prevent him not; for no man doeth powers in my name, and can hasten to speak evil of me. ¹⁶¹⁴⁴ Every one who is not in opposition to you is with you. ¹⁷¹⁴⁵ Woe unto the world because of trials!³¹⁸ but woe unto that man by whose hand the trials come ¹⁸¹⁴⁷ If thy hand or thy foot injure thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee; for it is better for thee to enter into life being halt or maimed, and not that thou shouldest have two hands or two feet, and fall into the hell of fire that burneth³¹⁹ for ever; ¹⁹¹⁴⁹ where their worm dieth not, and their fire is not quenched. ²⁰¹⁵⁰ And if thine eye seduce³²⁰ thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee; ²¹¹⁵² for it is better for thee to enter the kingdom of God with one eye, than that thou shouldest have two eyes, and fall into the fire of Gehenna; ²²¹⁵³ where their worm dieth not, and their fire is not quenched. ²³¹⁵⁴ Every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. ²⁴¹⁵⁵ How good is salt! but if the salt also be tasteless, wherewith shall it be salted? ²⁵¹⁵⁶ It is fit neither for the land nor for dung, but they cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. ²⁶¹⁵⁷ Have ye salt in yourselves, and be in peace one with another.

27158 And he arose from thence, and came to the borders of Judaea beyond Jordan: and there went unto him thither great multitudes, and he healed them; and he taught them also, according to his custom. ²⁸¹⁵⁹ And the Pharisees came unto him, tempting him, and asking him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? ²⁹¹⁶⁰ He said, What did Moses command you? ³⁰¹⁶¹ They said, Moses made it allowable for us, saying, Whosoever will, let him write a writing of divorcement, and

put away his wife. 31162 Jesus answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, He that made them from the beginning made them male and female, and said, 32163 For this reason shall the man leave his father and his mother, and cleave to his wife; and they both shall be one body? 33164 So then they are not twain, but one body; the thing, then, which God hath joined together, let no man put asunder. 34165 And those Pharisees said unto him, Why did Moses consent³²¹ that a man should give a writing of divorcement and put her away? 35167 Jesus said unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts gave you leave to divorce your wives; but in the beginning it was not so. 36168 I say unto you, Whosoever putteth away³²² his wife without fornication, and marrieth another, hath exposed her to adultery. 37170 And his disciples, when he entered the house, asked him again about that. 38171 And he said unto them, Every one who putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, hath exposed her to adultery. 39172 And any woman that leaveth her husband, and becometh another's, hath committed adultery. And whosoever marrieth her that is divorced hath committed adultery. 40173 And his disciples said unto him, If there be between the man and the woman such a case³²³ as this, it is not good for a man to marry. 41175 He said unto them, Not every man can endure this saying, except him to whom it is given. 42176 There are eunuchs which from their mother's womb³²⁴ were born so; and there are eunuchs which through men became eunuchs; and there are eunuchs which made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He that is able to be content, let him be content.

43178 Then they brought to him children, that he should lay his hand upon them, and pray: and his disciples were rebuking those that were bringing them. 44179 And Jesus saw, and it was distressing to him; and he said unto them, Suffer the children to come unto me, and prevent them not; for those that are like these have the kingdom of God. 45180 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever receiveth not the kingdom of God as this child, shall not enter it. 46181 And he took them in his arms, and laid his hand upon them, and blessed them.

Section XXVI.

1182 And there came unto him publicans and sinners to hear his word. 2183 And the scribes and the Pharisees murmured, and said, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them. 3184 And Jesus, when he beheld their murmuring, spake unto them this parable: 4185 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if one of them were lost, would not leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go and seek the straying one till he found it? 5186 Verily I say unto you, When he findeth it, he will rejoice over it more than over the ninety-nine that went not astray; 6187 and bear it on his shoulders, and bring it to his house, and call his friends and neighbours, and say unto them, Rejoice with me, since I have found my straying sheep. 7188 So your Father which is in heaven willeth³²⁵ not that one of these little ones that have strayed should perish, and he seeketh for them repentance. 8190 I say unto you, Thus there shall be rejoicing in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety-nine righteous persons that do not need repentance.

9191 And what woman having ten drachmas would lose one of them, and not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek it with care till she found it; 10192 and when she found it, call her friends and neighbours, and say unto them, Rejoice with me, as I have found my drachma that was lost? 11193 I say unto you, Thus there shall be joy before the angels of God over the one sinner that repenteth, more than over the ninety-nine righteous persons that do not need repentance.

12194 And Jesus spoke unto them also another parable: 13195 A man had two sons: and the younger son said unto him, My father, give me my portion that belongeth to me of thy goods. 14196 And he divided between them his property. And after a few days the younger son gathered everything that belonged to him, and went into a far country, and there squandered his property by living prodigally. 15197 And when he had exhausted everything he had, there occurred a great dearth in that country. 16198 And when he was in want, he went and joined himself to one of the people of a city of that country; and that man sent him into the field³²⁶ to feed the swine. 17200 And he used to long to fill his belly with the carob that those swine were eating: and no man gave him. 18201 And when he returned unto himself, he said, How many hired servants now in my father's house have bread enough and to spare, while I here perish with hunger! 19202 I will arise and go to my father's house, and say unto him, My father, 20203 I have sinned in heaven and before thee, and am not worthy now to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 21204 And he arose, and came to his father. But his father saw him while he was at a distance, and was moved with compassion for him, and ran,³²⁷ and fell on his breast,³²⁸ and kissed him. 22207 And his son said unto him, My father, I have sinned in heaven and before thee, and am not worthy to be called thy son. 23208 His father said unto his servants, Bring forth a stately robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and put on him shoes on his feet: 24209 and bring and slay a fatted ox, that we may eat and make merry: 25210 for this my son was dead, and is alive; and was lost, and is found. 26211 And they began to be merry.³²⁹ Now his elder son was in the field; and when he came and drew near to the house, he heard the sound of many singing.³³⁰ 27214 And he called one of the lads, and asked him what this was. 28215 He said unto him, Thy brother hath arrived; and thy father hath slain a fatted ox, since he hath received him safe and sound.³³¹ 29217 And he was angry, and would not enter; so his father went out, and besought him to enter. 30218 And he said to his father, How many years do I serve thee in bondage, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine; and thou hast never given me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends? 31219 but this thy son, when he had squandered thy property with harlots, and come, thou hast slain for him a fatted ox. 32220 His father said unto him, My son, thou art at all times with me, and everything I have is thine. 33221 It behoveth thee to rejoice and make merry, since this thy brother was dead, and is alive; and was lost, and is found.

34222 And he spake a parable unto his disciples: There was a rich man, and he had a steward; and he was accused to him that he had squandered his property. 35223 So his lord called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear regarding thee? Give me the account of thy stewardship; for it is now impossible that thou shouldst be a steward for me. 36224 The steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh from me the stewardship? To dig I am not able; and to beg³³² I am ashamed. 37226 I know what I will do, that, when I go out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. 38227 And he called one after another of his lord's debtors, and said to the first, How much owest thou my lord? 39228 He said unto him, An hundred portions³³³ of oil. He said unto him, Take thy writing, and sit down, and write quickly fifty portions.³³⁴ 40231 And he said to the next, And thou, how much owest thou my lord? He said unto him, An hundred cors of wheat. He said unto him, Take thy writing, and sit down, and write eighty cors. 41232 And our³³⁵ lord commended the sinful steward³³⁶ because he had done a wise deed; for the children of this world are wiser than the children of the light in this their age. 42235 And I also say unto you, Make unto yourselves friends with the wealth of this unrighteousness;³³⁷ so that, when it is exhausted, they may receive you into their tents for ever.

43237 He who is faithful in a little is faithful also in much: and he who is unrighteous in a little is unrighteous also in much. 44239 If then in the wealth of unrighteousness ye were not trustworthy, who will intrust you with the truth? 45241 If ye are not found faithful in what does not belong to you, who will give you what belongeth to you?

Section XXVII.

1242 Therefore the kingdom of heaven is like a certain king, who would make a reckoning with his servants. 2243 And when he began to make it, they brought to him one who owed him ten talents. 3245 And because he had not wherewith to pay, his lord ordered that he should be sold, he, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment be made. 4246 So that servant fell down and worshipped him, and said unto him, My lord, have patience with me, and I shall pay thee everything. 5247 And the lord of that servant had compassion, and released him, and forgave him his debt. 6248 And that servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him a hundred pence; 341 and he took him, and dealt severely with him, and said unto him, Give me what thou owest. 7250 So the fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, and said, Grant me respite, and I will pay thee. 8251 And he would not; but took him, and cast him into prison, till he should give him his debt. 9252 And when their fellow-servants saw what happened, it distressed them much; and they came and told their lord of all that had taken place. 10253 Then his lord called him, and said unto him, Thou wicked servant, all that debt I forgave thee, because thou besoughtest me: 11254 was it not then incumbent on thee also to have mercy on thy fellow-servant, as I had mercy on thee? 120 And his lord became wroth, and delivered him to the scourgers, till he should pay all that he owed. 131 So shall my Father which is in heaven do unto you, if one forgive not his brother his wrong conduct 343 from his heart. 143 Take heed within 344 yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. 155 And if he act wrongly towards thee seven times in a day, and on that day return seven times unto thee, and say, I repent towards thee; forgive him. 166 And if thy brother act wrongly towards thee, go and reprove him between thee and him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. 177 But if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two, and so 345 at the mouth of two or three every saying shall be established. 189 And if he listen not to these also, tell the congregation; 346 and if he listen not even to the congregation, let him be unto thee as a publican and a Gentile. 347 1912 Verily I say unto you, All that ye bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: 2013 and what ye loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. I say unto you also, If two of you agree on earth to ask, everything shall 348 be granted them from my Father which is in heaven. 2115 For where two or three are gathered in my name, there am I amongst them. 2216 Then Cephas drew near to him, and said unto him, My Lord, how many times, if my brother act wrongly towards me, should I forgive him? until seven times? 2317 Jesus said unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven; but, Until seventy times seven, seven. 349 2419 And the servant that knoweth his lord's will, and maketh not ready for him according to his will, shall meet with much punishment; but he that knoweth not, and doeth something for which he meriteth punishment, shall meet with slight punishment. 2520 Every one to whom much hath been given, much shall be asked of him; and he that hath had much committed to him, much shall be required at his hand. 2621 I came to cast fire upon the earth; and I would that it had been kindled already. 350 2723 And I have a baptism to be baptized with, and greatly am I straitened till it be accomplished. 2824 See that ye despise not 351 one of these little ones that believe in me. Verily I say unto you, Their angels at all times see the face of my Father which

is in heaven. 2926 The Son of man came to save the thing which was lost.

3027 And after that, Jesus walked in Galilee; and he did not like to walk in Judaea, because the Jews sought to kill him. 3128 And there came people who told him of the Galilaeans, those whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 3229 Jesus answered and said unto them, Do ye imagine that those Galilaeans were sinners more than all the Galilaeans, so that this thing has come upon them? Nay. 3330 Verily I say unto you now, 352 that ye shall all also, if ye repent not, likewise perish. 3432 Or perchance those eighteen on whom the palace fell in Siloam, and slew them, do ye imagine that they were to be condemned 353 more than all the people that dwell in Jerusalem? Nay. 3534 Verily I say unto you, If ye do not all repent, ye shall perish like them.

3635 And he spake unto them this parable: A man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. 3736 So he said to the husbandman, Lo, three years do I come and seek fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it render the ground unoccupied? 3837 The husbandman said unto him, My lord, leave it this year also, that I may dig about it, and dung it; 3938 then if it bear fruit! and if not, then cut it down in the coming year.

4039 And when Jesus was teaching on the sabbath day in one of the synagogues, there was there a woman that had a spirit of disease eighteen years; 4140 and she was bowed down, and could not straighten herself at all. 4241 And Jesus saw her, and called her, and said unto her, Woman, be loosed from thy disease. 4342 And he put his hand upon her; and immediately she was straightened, and praised God. 4443 And the chief 354 of the synagogue answered with anger, because Jesus had healed on a sabbath, and said unto the multitudes, There are six days in which work ought to be done; come in them and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. 4545 But Jesus answered and said unto him, Ye hypocrites, doth not each of you on the sabbath day loose his ox or his ass from the manger, and go and water it? 4646 Ought not this woman, who is a daughter of Abraham, and whom the devil 355 hath bound eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? 4748 And when he said this, they were all put to shame, those standing, who were opposing him: 356 and all the people were pleased with all the wonders that proceeded from his hand.

Section XXVIII. 357

151 And at that time the feast of tabernacles of the Jews drew near. 252 So the brethren of Jesus said unto him, Remove now hence, and go to Judaea, that thy disciples may see the deeds that thou doest. 353 For no man doeth a thing secretly and wisheth to be apparent. 454 If thou doest this, shew thyself to the world. For up to this time not even the brethren of Jesus believed on him. 555 Jesus said unto them, My time till now has not arrived; but as for you, your time is always ready. 656 It is not possible for the world to hate you; but me it hateth, for I bear witness against it, that its deeds are evil. 757 As for you, go ye up unto this feast: but I go not up now to this feast; for my time has not yet been completed. 858 He said this, and remained behind in Galilee.

959 But when his brethren went up unto the feast, he journeyed from Galilee, and to came to the borders of Judaea, to the country beyond Jordan; 1060 and there came after him great multitudes, and he healed them all there. 1161 And he went out, and proceeded to the feast, not openly, but as one that conceals himself. 1262 And the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, In what place

is this man? 1363 And there occurred much murmuring there in the great multitude that came to the feast, on his account. For some said, He is good: and others said, Nay, but he leadeth the people astray. 1464 But no man spake of him openly for fear of the Jews.

1565 But when the days of the feast of tabernacles were half over, Jesus went up to the temple, and taught. 1666 And the Jews wondered, and said, How doth this man know writing, 358 seeing he hath not learned? 1768 Jesus answered and said, My doctrine 359 is not mine, but his that sent me. 1870 Whoever wisheth to do his will understandeth my doctrine? whether it be from God, or whether I speak of mine own accord. 1971 Whosoever speaketh of his own accord seeketh praise for himself; but whosoever seeketh praise for him that sent him, he is true, and unrighteousness in his heart there is none. 2072 Did not Moses give you the law, and no man of you keepeth the law? 2173 Why seek ye to kill me? The multitude answered and said unto him, Thou hast demons: 360 who seeketh to kill thee? 2275 Jesus answered and said unto them, I did one deed, and ye all marvel because of this. 2376 Moses hath given you circumcision (not because it is from Moses, but it is from the fathers); and ye on the sabbath circumcise a man. 2477 And if a man is circumcised on the sabbath day, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I healed on the sabbath day the whole man? 2578 Judge not with hypocrisy, but judge righteous judgement.

2679 And some people from Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they seek to slay? 2780 And lo, he discourseth with them openly, and they say nothing unto him. Think you that our elders have learned that this is the Messiah indeed? 2881 But this man is 361 known whence he is; and the Messiah, when he cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. 2983 So Jesus lifted up his voice as he taught in the temple, and said, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and of my own accord am I not come, 3084 but he that sent me is true, he whom ye know not: but I know him; for I am from him, and he sent me. 3185 And they sought to seize him: and no man laid a hand on him, because his hour had not yet come. 3286 But many of the multitude believed on him; and they said, The Messiah, when he cometh, can it be that he will do more than these signs that this man doeth?

3387 And a man of that multitude said unto our Lord, Teacher, say to my brother that he divide with me the inheritance. 3488 Jesus said unto him, Man, who is it that appointed me over you as a judge and divider? 3589 And he said unto his disciples, Take heed within yourselves of all inordinate desire; for it is not in abundance of possessions that life shall be. 3690 And he gave them this parable: The ground of a rich man brought forth abundant produce: 3791 and he pondered within himself, and said, What shall I do, since I have no place to store my produce? 3892 And he said, I will do this: I will pull down the buildings of my barns, and build them, and make them greater; and store there all my wheat and my goods. 3993 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid by for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, enjoy thyself. 4094 God said unto him, O than of little intelligence, this night shall thy soul be taken from thee; and this that thou hast prepared, whose shall it be? 4195 So is he that layeth up treasures for himself, and is not rich in God.

4296 And while Jesus was going in the way, there came near to him a young man 362 of the rulers, 363 and fell on his knees, and asked him, and said, Good Teacher, what is it that I must do that I may have eternal life? 4399 Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good, while there is

none good but the one, even God?364 44101 Thou knowest the commandments.365 45103 If thou wouldest enter into life, keep the commandments.366 The young man said unto him, Which of the commandments?367 Jesus said unto him, 46106 Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not do injury, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Love thy neighbour as thyself. 47107 That young man said unto him, All these have I kept from my youth: what then is it that I lack? 48108 And Jesus looked intently at him, and loved him, and said unto him, If thou wouldest be perfect, what thou lackest is one thing:368 49110 go away and sell everything that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and take thy cross, and follow me. 50111 And that young man frowned at this word, and went away feeling sad; for he was very rich. 51112 And when Jesus saw his sadness, he looked towards his disciples, and said unto them, How hard it is for them that have possessions to enter the kingdom of God!

Section XXIX.

1113 Verily I say unto you, It is difficult for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. 2114 And I say unto you also, that it is easier for a camel to enter the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. 3115 And the disciples were wondering at these sayings. And Jesus answered and said unto them again, My children, how hard it is for those that rely on their possessions to enter the kingdom of God! 4116 And those that were listening wondered more, and said amongst themselves, being agitated,369 Who, thinkest thou, can be saved? 5118 And Jesus looked at them intently, and said unto them, With men this is not possible, but with God it is: it is possible for God to do everything. 6119 Simon Cephas said unto him, Lo, we have left everything, and followed thee; what is it, thinkest thou, that we shall have? 7120 Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, Ye that have followed me, in the new world, when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit on twelve thrones, and shall judge the twelve tribes of Israel. 8121 Verily I say unto you, No man leaveth houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or kinsfolk, or lands, because of the kingdom of God, or for my sake, and the sake of my gospel, 9122 who shall not obtain370 many times as much in this time, and in the world to come inherit eternal life: 10124 and now in this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecution; and in the world to come everlasting life. 11125 Many that are first shall be last,371 and that are last shall be first.

12127 And when the Pharisees heard all this, because of their love for wealth they scoffed at him. 13128 And Jesus knew what was in their hearts, and said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves before men; while God knows your hearts: the thing that is lofty with men is base before God.

14129 And he began to say, A certain man was rich, and wore silk and purple, and enjoyed himself every day in splendour: 15130 and there was a poor man named Lazarus, and he was cast down at the door of the rich man, 16131 afflicted with sores, and he longed to fill his belly with the crumbs that fell from the table of that rich man; yea, even372 the dogs used to come and lick his sores. 17133 And it happened that that poor man died, and the angels conveyed him into the bosom of Abraham: and the rich man also died, and was buried. 18134 And while he was being tormented in Hades, he lifted up his eyes from afar, and saw Abraham with373 Lazarus in his bosom. 19136 And he called with a loud voice, and said, My father Abraham, have mercy upon

me, and send Lazarus to wet the tip of his finger with water, and moisten my tongue for me; for, behold, I am burned in this flame. 20137 Abraham said unto him, My son, remember that thou receivedst thy good things in thy life, and Lazarus his afflictions: but now, behold, he is at rest here, and thou art tormented. 21138 And in addition to all this, there is between us and you a great abyss placed, so that they that would cross unto you from hence cannot, nor yet from thence do they cross unto us. 22139 He said unto him, Then I beseech thee, my father, to send him to my father's house; 23140 for I have five brethren; let him go, that they also sin not,³⁷⁴ and come to the abode of this torment.³⁷⁵ 24143 Abraham said unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. 25144 He said unto him, Nay,³⁷⁶ my father Abraham: but let a man from the dead go unto them, and they will repent. 26146 Abraham said unto him, If they listen neither to Moses nor to the prophets, neither if a man from the dead rose would they believe him.

27147 The kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers for his vineyard. 28148 And he agreed with the labourers on one penny a day for each labourer, and he sent them into his vineyard. 29149 And he went out in three hours, and saw others standing in the market idle. 30150 He said unto them, Go ye also into my vineyard, and what is right I will pay you. 31151 And they went. And he went out also at the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise, and sent them. 32152 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle. He said unto them, Why are ye standing the whole day idle? 33153 They said unto him, Because no one hath hired us. He said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and what is right ye shall receive. 34154 So when evening came, the lord of the vineyard said unto his steward, Call the labourers, and pay them their wages; and begin with the later ones, and end with the former ones. 35155 And those of eleven hours³⁷⁷ came, and received each a penny. 36157 When therefore the first came, they supposed that they should receive something more; and they also received each a penny. 37158 And when they received it, they spake angrily against the householder, and said, 38159 These last worked one hour, and thou hast made them equal with us, who have suffered the heat of the day, and its burden. 39160 He answered and said unto one of them, My friend, I do thee no wrong: was it not for a penny that thou didst bargain with me? 40161 Take what is thine, and go thy way; for I wish to give this last as I have given thee. 41162 Or am I not entitled to do with what is mine³⁷⁸ what I choose? 42164 Or is thine eye perchance evil, because I am good? Thus shall the last ones be first, and the first last. The called are many, and the chosen are few.

43165 And when Jesus entered into the house of one of the chiefs of the Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, and they were watching him to see what he would, do, 44166 and there was before him a man which had the dropsy, 45167 Jesus answered and said unto the scribes and the Pharisees, Is it lawful on the sabbath to heal? But they were silent. 46168 So he took him, and healed him, and sent him away. 47169 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have his son or his ox fall on the sabbath day into a well, and not lift him up straightway, and draw water for him? 48170 And they were not able to answer him a word to that.

Section XXX.

1171 And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden there, because he saw them choose the places that were in the highest part of the sitting room: 2172 When a man invites thee to a feast, do not go and sit at the head of the room; lest there be there a man more honourable than

thou, and he that invited you come and say unto thee, Give the place to this man: 3173 and thou be ashamed when thou risest and takest³⁷⁹ another place. 4175 But when thou art invited, go and sit last; so that when he that invited thee cometh, he may say unto thee, My friend, go up higher: and thou shalt have praise before all that were invited with thee. 5176 For every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and every one that abaseth himself shall be exalted.

6177 And he said also to him that had invited him, When thou makest a feast a or a banquet,³⁸⁰ do not invite thy friends, nor even thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest haply they also invite thee, and thou have this reward. 7179 But when thou makest a feast, invite the poor, and those with withered hand, and the lame, and the blind: 8180 and blessed art thou, since they have not the means to reward thee; 9181 that thy reward may be at the rising of the righteous. And when one of them that were invited heard that, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

10182 Jesus answered again in parables, and said, 11183 The kingdom of heaven hath been likened to³⁸¹ a certain king, which made a feast³⁸² for his son, and prepared a great banquet,³⁸³ and invited many: and he sent his servants at the time of the feast to inform them that were invited, 12187 Everything is made ready for you; come. And they would not come, but began all of them with one voice to make excuse. 13188 And the first said unto them, Say to him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out to see it: 14189 I pray thee to release³⁸⁴ me, for I ask to be excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to examine them: I pray thee to release me, for I ask to be excused. 15191 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. 16192 And the king sent also other servants, and said, Say to those that were invited, that my feast is ready, and my oxen and my fatlings are slain, and everything is ready: come to the feast. 17193 But they made light of it, and went, one to his field, and another to his merchandise: 18194 and the rest took his servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them. 19195 And one of the servants came, and informed his lord of what had happened. 20196 And when the king heard, he became angry, and sent his armies; and they destroyed those murderers, and burned their cities. 21197 Then he said to his servants, The feast is prepared, but those that were invited were not worthy. 22198 Go out quickly into the markets and into the partings of the ways of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and those with pains, and the lame, and the blind. And the servants did as the king commanded them. 23199 And they came, and said unto him, Our lord, we have done all that thou commandedst us, and there is here still room. 24200 So the lord said unto his servants, Go out into the roads, and the ways, and the paths, and every one that ye find, invite to the feast, and constrain them to enter, till my house is³⁸⁵ filled. 25202 I say unto you, that no one of those people that were invited shall taste of my feast. 26203 And those servants went out into the roads, and gathered all that they found, good and bad: and the banquet-house was filled with guests. 27204 And the king entered to see those who were seated, and he saw there a man not wearing a festive garment: 28205 and he said unto him, My friend, how didst thou come in here not having on festive garments? 29206 And he was silent. Then the king said to the servants, Bind his hands and his feet, and put him forth into the outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 30207 The called are many; and the chosen, few.

31208 And after that, the time of the feast of unleavened bread of the Jews arrived, and Jesus went out to go to Jerusalem. 32209 And as he went in the way, there met him ten persons who

were lepers, and stood afar off: 33210 and they lifted up their voice, and said, Our Master, Jesus, have mercy upon us. 34211 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and shew yourselves unto the priests. And when they went, they were cleansed. 35212 And one of them, when he saw himself cleansed, returned, and was praising God with a loud voice; 36213 and he fell on his face before the feet of Jesus, giving him thanks: and this man was a Samaritan. 37214 Jesus answered and said, Were not those that were cleansed ten? where then are the nine? 38215 Not one of them turned aside to come and praise God, but this man who is of a strange people. 39216 He said unto him, Arise, and go thy way; for thy faith hath given thee life.386

40218 And while they were going up in the way to Jerusalem, Jesus went in front of them; and they wondered, and followed him fearing. And he took his twelve disciples apart, and began to tell them privately387 what was about to befall him. 41220 And he said unto them, We are going up to Jerusalem, and all the things shall be fulfilled that are written in the prophets concerning the Son of man. 42221 He shall be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and deliver him to the peoples;388 43223 and they shall treat him shamefully, and scourge him, and spit in his face, and humble him,389 44225 and crucify him, and slay him: and on the third day he shall rise. 45226 But they understood not one thing of this; but this word was hidden from them, and they did not perceive these things that were addressed to them.

46227 Then came near to him the mother of the (two) sons of Zebedee, she and her (two) sons, and worshipped him, and asked of him a certain thing. And he said unto her, What wouldest thou? 47228 And James and John, her two sons, came forward, and said unto him, Teacher, we would that all that we ask thou wouldest do unto us. 48229 He said unto them,390 What would ye that I should do unto you? 49231 They said unto him, Grant us that we may sit, the one on thy right, and the other So on thy left, in thy kingdom and thy glory. 50232 And Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I am to drink? and with the baptism that I am to be baptized with, will ye be baptized? 51233 And they said unto him, We are able. Jesus said unto them, The cup that I drink ye shall drink; and with the baptism wherewith I am baptized ye shall be baptized: 52234 but that ye should sit on my right and on my left is not mine to give; but it is for him for whom my Father hath prepared it.

Section XXXI.

1235 And when the ten heard, they were moved with anger against James and John. 2236 And Jesus called them, and said unto them, Ye know that the rulers of the nations are their lords; and their great men are set in authority over them. 3237 Not thus shall it be amongst you: but he amongst you that would be great, let him be to you a servant; 4238 and whoever of you would be first,391 let him be to every man a bond-servant: 5240 even as the Son of man also came not to be served, but to serve, and to give himself a ransom in place of the many. 6241 He said this, and was going about the villages and the cities, and teaching; and he went to Jerusalem. 7242 And a man asked him, Are those that shall be saved few? Jesus answered and said unto them, Strive ye to enter at the narrow door: 8243 I say unto you now, that many shall seek to enter, and shall not be able392 -9245 from the time when the master of the house riseth, and closeth the door, and ye shall be standing without, and shall knock at the door, and shall begin to say, 10246 Our lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say, I say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: and ye shall begin to say, 11247 Before thee we did eat and drink, and in our markets didst thou teach;

and he shall say unto you, I know you not whence ye are; depart³⁹³ from me, ye servants of untruth. 12249 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, while ye are put forth without. 13250 And they shall come from the east and the west, and from the north and the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 14251 And there shall then be last that have become first, and first that have become last. 15252 And when Jesus entered and passed through Jericho, 16253 there was a man named Zacchaeus, rich, and chief of the publicans. 17254 And he desired to see Jesus who he was; and he was not able for the pressure of the crowd, because Zacchaeus was little of stature. 18255 And he hastened, and went before Jesus, and went up into an unripe fig tree³⁹⁴ to see Jesus: for he was to pass thus. 191 And when Jesus came to that place, he saw him, and said unto him, Make haste, and come down, Zacchaeus: to-day I must be in thy house. 202 And he hastened, and came down, and received him joyfully. 213 And when they all saw, they murmured, and said, He hath gone in and lodged with a man that is a sinner. 224 So Zacchaeus stood, and said unto Jesus, My Lord, now half of my possessions I give to the poor, and what I have unjustly taken³⁹⁵ from every man I give him fourfold. 236 Jesus said unto him, Today is salvation come to this house, because this man also is a³⁹⁶ son of Abraham. 248 For the Son of man came to seek and save the thing that was lost.

259 And when Jesus went out of Jericho, he and his disciples, there came after him a great multitude. 2610 And there was a blind man sitting by the way side begging. 2711 And his name was Timaeus, the son of Timaeus. And he heard the sound of the multitude passing, and asked, Who is this? 2812 They said unto him, Jesus the Nazarene passeth by. 2913 And when he heard that it was Jesus, he called out with a loud voice, and said, Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me. 3014 And those that went before Jesus were rebuking him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more, and said, Son of David, have mercy on me. 3115 And Jesus stood, and commanded that they should call him. And they called the blind man, and said unto him, Be of good courage, and rise; for, behold, he calleth thee. 3216 And the blind man threw away his garment, and rose, and came to Jesus. 3317 Jesus said unto him, What dost thou wish that I should do unto thee? And that blind man said unto him, My Lord and Master, that my eyes may be opened, so that I may see thee.³⁹⁷ 3419 And Jesus had compassion on him, and touched his eyes, and said unto him, See; for thy faith hath saved thee. 3520 And immediately he received his sight,³⁹⁸ and came after him, and praised God; and all the people that saw praised God.

3622 And he spake a parable because he was nearing³⁹⁹ Jerusalem, and they supposed that at that time the kingdom of God was about to appear. 3724 He said unto them, A man, a son of a great race, went into a far country, to receive a kingdom, and return. 3825 And he called his ten servants, and gave them ten shares, and said unto them, Trade till the time of my coming. 3926 But the people of his city hated him, and sent messengers after him, and said, We will not that this man reign over us. 4027 And when he had received a⁴⁰⁰ kingdom, and returned, he said that the servants to whom he had given the money should be called unto him, that he might know what each of them had traded. 4129 And the first came, and said, My lord, thy share hath gained ten shares. 4230 The king said unto him, Thou good and faithful servant, who hast been found faithful in a little, be thou set over ten districts. 4331 And the second came, and said, My lord, thy portion hath gained five portions. 4432 And he said unto him also, And thou shall be set over five districts. 4533 And another came, and said, My lord, here is thy portion, which was with me laid by in a

napkin: 4634 I feared thee, because thou art a hard man, and takest what thou didst not leave, and seekest what thou didst not give, and reapest what thou didst not sow. 4735 His lord said unto him, From thy mouth shall I judge thee, thou wicked and idle servant, who wast untrustworthy. Thou knewest that I am a hard man, and take what I did not leave, and reap what I did not sow: 4836 why didst thou not put my money at usury, and so I might come and seek it, with its gains? 4937 And he said unto those that were standing in front of him, Take from him the share, and give it to him that hath ten shares. 5038 They said unto him, Our lord, he hath ten shares. 5139 He said unto them, I say unto you, Every one that hath shall be given unto; and he that hath not, that which he hath also shall be taken from him. 5240 And those mine enemies who would not that I should reign over them, bring them, and slay them before me.

Section XXXII.

141 And when Jesus entered Jerusalem, he went up to the temple of God, and found there oxen and sheep and doves. 242 And when he beheld those that sold and those that bought, and the money-changers sitting, he made for himself a scourge of rope, and drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen, and the money-changers; and he threw down their money, and upset their tables, and the seats of them that sold the doves; 3 and he was teaching, and saying unto them, Is it not written, My house is a house of prayer for all peoples? and ye have made it a den for robbers. 443 And he said unto those that sold the doves, Take this hence, and make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. 544 And he suffered not any one to carry vessels inside the temple. 645 And his disciples remembered the scripture, The zeal of thy house hath eaten me up. 746 The Jews answered and said unto him, What sign hast thou shewn us, that thou doest this? 847 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and I shall raise it in three days. 948 The Jews said unto him, This temple was built in forty-six years, and wilt thou raise it in three days? 1049 But he spake unto them of the temple of his body, that when⁴⁰¹ they destroyed it, he would raise it in three days. 1151 When therefore he rose from among the dead, his disciples remembered that he said this; and they believed the scriptures, and the word that Jesus spake.

1252 And when Jesus sat down over against the treasury, he observed how the multitudes were casting their offerings into the treasury: and many rich men were throwing in much. 1353 And there came a poor widow, and cast in two mites. 1454 And Jesus called his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, This poor widow cast into the treasury more than all the people: 1555 and all of these cast into the place of the offering of God⁴⁰² of the superfluity of their wealth; while this woman of her want threw in all that she possessed. 1657 And he spake unto them this parable, concerning people who trusted in themselves that they are righteous, and despised every man: 1758 Two men went up to the temple to pray; one of them a Pharisee, and the other a publican. 1859 And the Pharisee stood apart,⁴⁰³ and prayed thus, O Lord, I thank thee, since I am not like the rest of men, the unjust, the profligate, the extortioners, or even like this publican; but I fast two days a week, and tithe all my possessions.⁴⁰⁴ 1962 And the publican was standing at a distance, ²⁰⁶³ and he would not even lift up his eyes to heaven, but was beating upon his breast, and saying, O Lord, have mercy on me, me the sinner. 2164 I say unto you, that this man went down justified to his house more than the Pharisee. Every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and every one that abaseth himself shall be exalted.

2265 And when eventide was come, he left all the people, and went outside the city to Bethany, he and his twelve, and he remained there. 2366 And all the people, because they knew the place, came to him, and he received them; and them that had need of healing he healed. 2467 And on the morning of the next day, when he returned to the city from Bethany, he hungered. 2568 And he saw a fig tree at a distance on the beaten highway, having on it leaves. And he came unto it, expecting to find something on it; and when he came, he found nothing on it but the leaves-it was not the season of figs-and he said unto it, Henceforward for ever let no man eat fruit of thee. 2671 And his disciples heard.

2772 And they came to Jerusalem. And there was there a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, ruler of the Jews. 2873 This man came unto Jesus by night, and said unto him, My Master, we know that thou hast been sent from God as a teacher; and no man can do these signs that thou doest, except him whom God is with. 2974 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, If a man be not born a second time, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 3075 Nicodemus said unto him, How can a man who is old be born? can he, think you, return again to his mother's womb a second time, to enter and be born? 3176 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, If a man be not born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. 3277 For he that is born of flesh is flesh; and he that is born of Spirit is spirit. 3378 Wonder not that I said unto thee that ye must be born a second time. 3479 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest its voice, but thou knowest not from what place it cometh, nor whither it goeth: so is every man that is born of the Spirit. 3580 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can that be? 3681 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou teaching Israel, and yet knowest not these things? 3783 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, What we know we say, and what we have seen we witness: and ye receive not our witness. 3884 If I said unto you what is on earth, and ye believed not, how then, if I say unto you what is in heaven, will ye believe? 3985 And no man hath ascended up into heaven, except him that descended from heaven, the Son of man, which is in heaven. 4086 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so is the Son of man to be lifted up; 4187 so that every man who may believe in him may not perish, but have eternal life. 4288 God so loved the world, that he should give his only Son; and so every one that believeth on him should not perish, but should have eternal life. 4390 God sent not his Son into the world to judge the world; but that the world might be saved by his hand. 4491 He that believeth in him shall not be judged: but he that believeth not is condemned beforehand, because he hath not believed in the name of the only Son, the Son of God. 4593 This is the judgement, that the light came into the world, and men loved the darkness more than the light; because their deeds were evil. 4694 Whosoever doeth evil deeds hateth the light, and cometh not to the light, lest his deeds be reproved. 4795 But he that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be known, that they have been done in God.

Section XXXIII.

196 And when evening came, Jesus went forth outside of the city, he and his disciples. 297 And as they passed in the morning, the disciples saw that fig tree withered away from its root. 398 And they passed by, and said, How did the fig tree dry up immediately? 499 And Simon remembered, and said unto him, My Master, behold, that fig tree which thou didst curse hath dried up. 5100 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Let there be in you the faith of God. 6101 Verily I say unto you, if ye believe, and doubt not in your hearts, and assure yourselves that that will be which ye

say, ye shall have what ye say. 7102 And if ye say to this mountain, Remove, and fall410 into the sea, it shall be. 8104 And all that ye ask God in prayer, and believe, he will give you. 9105 And the apostles411 said unto our Lord, Increase our412 faith. 10108 He said unto them, If there be in you faith like a grain of mustard, ye shall say to this fig tree, Be thou torn up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it will obey you. 11109 Who of you hath a servant driving a yoke of oxen or tending sheep, and if he come from the field, will say unto him straightway, 12110 Go and sit down? Nay,413 he will say unto him, Make ready for me wherewith I may sup, and gird thy waist, and serve me, till I eat and drink; and afterwards thou shalt eat and drink also. 13112 Doth that servant haply, who did what he was bid, receive his praise? I think not. 14113 So ye also, when ye have done all that ye were bid, say, We are idle servants; what it was our duty to do, we have done.

15114 For this reason I say unto you, Whatever ye pray and ask, believe that ye receive, and ye shall have. 16115 And when ye stand to pray, forgive what is in your heart against any man; and your Father which is in heaven will forgive you also your wrong-doings. 17116 But if ye forgive not men their wrong-doings, neither will your Father forgive you also your wrong-doings.

18117 And he spake unto them a parable also, that they should pray at all times, and not be slothful: 19118 There was a judge in a city, who feared not God, nor was ashamed for men: 20119 and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, and said, Avenge me of mine adversary. 21120 And he would not for a long time: but afterwards he said within himself, If of God I have no fear, and before men I have no shame; yet because this widow vexeth me, 22121 I will avenge her, that she come not at all times and annoy me. 23122 And our Lord said, Hear ye what the judge of injustice said. 24123 And shall not God still more do vengeance for his elect, who call upon him in the night and in the day, and grant them respite? I say unto you, He will do vengeance for them speedily. 25124 Thinkest thou the Son of man will come and find faith on the earth? 26125 And they came again to Jerusalem. 27126 And it came to pass, on one of the days, as Jesus was walking in the temple, and teaching the people, and preaching the gospel, that the chief priests and the scribes with the elders came upon him, and said unto him, Tell us: 28127 By what power doest thou this? and who gave thee this power to do that? 29128 And Jesus said unto them, I also will ask you one word, and if ye tell me, I also shall tell you by what power I do that. 30129 The baptism of John, from what place is it? from heaven or of men? Tell me. 31130 And they reflected within them- selves, and said, If we shall say unto him, From heaven; he will say unto us, 32131 For what reason did ye not believe him? But414 if we shall say, Of men; we fear415 that the people will stone us, all of them. 33134 And all of them were holding416 to John, that he was a true prophet. 34136 They answered and said unto him, We know not. 35137 Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you also by what power I work. What think ye? A man had two sons; and he went to the first, and said unto him, My son, go to-day, and till in the vineyard. 36138 And he answered and said, I do not wish to: but finally he repented, and went. 37139 And he went to the other, and said unto him likewise. 38140 And he answered and said, Yea, my lord: and went not. Which of these two did the will of his father? They said unto him, The first. Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, The publicans and harlots go before you into the kingdom of God. 39141 John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and harlots believed him; and ye, not even when ye saw, did ye repent at last, that ye might believe in him.

40142 Hear another parable: A man was a householder, and planted a vineyard, and surrounded it with a hedge, 41143 and digged in it a winepress, and built in it a tower, and gave it to husbandmen, and went to a distance for a long time. 42144 So when the time of the fruits came, he sent his servants⁴¹⁷ unto the husbandmen, that they might send him of the produce⁴¹⁸ of his vineyard. 43147 And those husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty. 44148 And he sent unto them another servant also; and they stoned him, and wounded⁴¹⁹ him, and sent him away with shameful handling. 45150 And he sent again another; and they slew him. And he sent many other servants unto them. 46151 And the husbandmen took his servants, and one they beat, and another they stoned, and another they slew. 47152 So he sent again other servants more than the first; and they did likewise with them. 48153 So the owner of the vineyard said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will see him and be ashamed. 49154 So at last he sent unto them his beloved son that he had. 50155 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said amongst themselves, This is the heir. 51156 And they said, We will slay him, and so the inheritance will be ours. 52157 So they took him, and put him forth without the vineyard, and slew him. 53158 When then the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do with those husbandmen? 54159 They said unto him, He will destroy them in the worst of ways,⁴²⁰ and give the vineyard to other husbandmen, who will give him fruit in its season. 55161 Jesus said unto them, Have ye never read in the scripture, The stone which the builders declared to be base, The same came to be at the head of the corner: 56162 From God was this, And it is wonderful in our eyes?

57163 Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a people that will produce fruit. 58164 And whosoever falleth on this stone shall be broken in pieces: but on whomsoever it falleth, it will grind him to powder. 59165 And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that it was concerning them he spake. 60166 And they sought to seize him; and they feared the multitude, because they were holding to him as the prophet.

Section XXXIV.

1167 Then went the Pharisees and considered how they might ensnare him in a word, and deliver him into the power of the judge,⁴²¹ and into the power of the ruler. 2169 And they sent unto him their disciples, with the kinsfolk of Herod; and they said unto him, Teacher, we know that thou speakest the truth, and teachest the way of God with equity,⁴²² and art not lifted up⁴²³ by any man: for thou actest not so as to be seen of any man. 3172 Tell us now, What is thy opinion? Is it lawful that we should pay the tribute to Caesar, or not? shall we give, or shall we not give? 4173 But Jesus knew their deceit, and said unto them, 5174 Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? Shew me the penny of the tribute. 6175 So they brought unto him a penny. Jesus said unto them, To whom belongeth this image and inscription? They said unto him, To Caesar. 7176 He said unto them, Give what is Caesar's to Caesar, and what is God's to God. 8177 And they could not make him slip in a single word before the people; and they marvelled at his word, and refrained.

9178 And on that day came the Sadducees, and said unto him,⁴²⁴ There is no life for the dead. 10180 And they asked him, and said unto him, Teacher, Moses said unto us, If a man die, not having children, let his brother take his wife, and raise up seed for his brother. 11181 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children; 12182 and the

second took his wife, and died without children; 13183 and the third also took her; and in like manner the seven of them also, and they died without leaving children. 14184 And last of them all the woman died also. 15185 At the resurrection, then, which of these seven shall have this woman? for all of them took her. 16186 Jesus answered and said unto them, Is it not for this that ye have erred, because ye know not the scriptures, nor the power of God? 17187 And the sons of this world take wives, and the women become the men's;⁴²⁵ 18189 but those that have become worthy of that world, and the resurrection from among the dead, do⁴²⁶ not take wives, and the women also do⁴²⁷ not become the men's. 19192 Nor is it possible that they should die; but they⁴²⁸ are like the angels, and are the children of God, because they have become the children of the resurrection. 20194 For in⁴²⁹ the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read in the book of Moses, how from the bush God said unto him, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? 21196 And God is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all of them are alive with him. And ye have erred greatly.

22197 And when the multitudes heard, they were wondering at his teaching. 23198 And some of the scribes answered and said unto him, Teacher, thou hast well said. 24199 But the rest of the Pharisees, when they saw his silencing the Sadducees on this point, gathered against him to contend with him.

25200 And one of the scribes, of those that knew the law, when he saw the excellence of his answer to them, desired to try him, and said unto him, 26201 What shall I do to inherit eternal life? and, Which of the commandments is greater, and has precedence in the law? 27202 Jesus said unto him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God, the Lord is one: 28203 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy thought, and with all thy strength. 29204 This is the great and preëminent⁴³⁰ commandment. 30206 And the second, which is like it, is, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. And another commandment greater than these two there is not. 31207 On these two commandments, then, are hung the law and the prophets. 32208 That scribe said unto him, Excellent! my Master;⁴³¹ thou hast said truly that he is one, and there is no other outside of him: 33210 and that a man should love him with all his heart, and with all his thought, and with all his soul, and with all his strength, and that he should love his neighbour as himself, is better than all savours and sacrifices. 34211 And Jesus saw him that he had answered wisely; and he answered and said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. 35212 Thou hast: spoken rightly: do this, and thou shalt live. 36213 And he, as his desire was to justify himself, said unto him, And who is my neighbour? 37214 Jesus said unto him, A man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and the robbers fell upon him, and stripped⁴³² him, and beat him, his life remaining in him but little,⁴³³ and went away. 38217 And it happened that there came down a certain priest that way; and he saw him, and passed by. 39218 And likewise a Levite also came and reached that place, and saw him, and passed by. 40219 And a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came to⁴³⁴ the place where he was, and saw him, and had compassion on him, and came near, and bound up his strokes,⁴³⁵ and poured on them wine and oil; 41222 and he set⁴³⁶ him on the ass, and brought him to the inn, and expended his care upon him. 42224 And on the morrow of that day he took out two pence, and gave them to the innkeeper, and said unto him, Care for him; and if thou spendest upon him more, when I return, I shall give thee. 43225 Who of these three now, thinkest thou, is nearest to him that fell among the robbers? 44226 And he said unto him, He that had compassion on him. 45227

Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou also likewise. And no man dared afterwards to ask him anything.

46228 And he was teaching every day in the temple. But the chief priests and scribes and the elders of the people sought to destroy him: and they could⁴³⁷ not find what they should do with him; ⁴⁷²³⁰ and all the people were hanging upon him to hear him. ⁴⁸²³¹ And many of the multitude believed on him, and said, The Messiah, when he cometh, can it be that he will do more than these signs that this man doeth? ⁴⁹²³² And the Pharisees heard the multitudes say that of him; and the chief priests sent officers⁴³⁸ to seize him. ⁵⁰²³⁴ And Jesus said unto them, I am with you but a short time yet, and I go to him that sent me. ⁵¹²³⁵ And ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I shall be, ye shall not be able to come. ⁵²²³⁶ The Jews said within themselves, Whither hath this man determined to go that we shall not be able⁴³⁹ to find him? can it be that he is determined to go to the regions of the nations,⁴⁴⁰ and teach the heathen? ⁵³²³⁹ What is this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come?

Section XXXV.

¹²⁴⁰ And on the great day, which is the last of the feast, Jesus stood, crying out and saying, If any man is thirsty, let him come unto me, and drink. ²²⁴¹ Every one that believeth in me, as the scriptures said, there shall flow from his belly rivers of pure water. ³²⁴² He said that referring to the Spirit, which those who believed in him were to receive: for the Spirit was not yet granted; and because Jesus had not yet been glorified. ⁴²⁴³ And many of the multitude that heard his words said, This is in truth the prophet. ⁵²⁴⁴ And others said, This is the Messiah. But others said, Can it be that the Messiah will come from Galilee? ⁶²⁴⁵ Hath not the scripture said that from the seed of David, and from Bethlehem, the village of David, the Messiah cometh? ⁷²⁴⁶ And there occurred a dissension in the multitude because of him. ⁸²⁴⁷ And some of them were wishing to seize him; but no man laid a hand upon him.

⁹²⁴⁸ And those officers came to the chief priests and Pharisees: and the priests said unto them, Why did ye not bring him? ¹⁰²⁴⁹ The officers said, Never spake man thus as speaketh this man. ¹¹²⁵⁰ The Pharisees said unto them, Perhaps ye also have gone astray? ¹²²⁵¹ Hath any of the rulers or the Pharisees haply believed in him? ¹³²⁵² except this people which knows not the law; they are accursed. ¹⁴²⁵³ Nicodemus, one of them, he that had come to Jesus by night, ¹⁵²⁵⁴ said unto them, Doth our law haply condemn a man, except it hear him first and know what he hath done? ¹⁶²⁵⁵ They answered and said unto him, Art thou also haply from Galilee? Search, and see that a prophet riseth not from Galilee.

¹⁷⁰ And when the Pharisees assembled, Jesus asked them, and said, ¹⁸¹ What say ye of the Messiah? whose son is he? They said unto him, The son of David. ¹⁹² He said unto them, And how doth David in the Holy Spirit call him Lord? for he said, ²⁰³ The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit on my right hand, That I may put thine enemies under thy feet.

²¹⁴ If then David calleth him Lord, how is he his son? ²²⁵ And no one was able to answer him; and no man dared from that day again to ask him of anything.

²³⁶ And Jesus addressed them again, and said, I am the light of the world; and he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall find the light of life. ²⁴⁷ The Pharisees said unto him, Thou

bearest witness to thyself; thy witness is not true. 258 Jesus answered and said unto them, If I bear witness to myself, my witness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye know not whence I came, or whither I go. 269 And ye judge after the flesh; and I judge no man. 2710 And even if I judge, my judgement is true; because I am not alone, but I and my Father which sent me. 2811 And in your law it is written, that the witness of two men is true. 2912 I am he that beareth witness to myself, and my Father which sent me beareth witness to me. 3013 They said unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye know not me, nor my Father: for did ye know me, ye would know my Father. 3114 He said these sayings in the treasury, where he was teaching in the temple: 3215 and no man seized him; because his hour had not yet come. Jesus said unto them again, I go truly, and ye shall seek me and not find me, and ye shall die in your sins: and where I go, ye cannot come. 3316 The Jews said, Will he haply kill himself, that he saith, Where I go, ye cannot come? 3417 He said unto them, Ye are from below; and I am from above: ye are of this world; and I am not of this world. 3518 I said unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins. 3619 The Jews said, And thou, who art thou? Jesus said unto them, If I should begin to speak unto you, I have concerning you many words and judgement: 3720 but he that sent me is true; and I, what I heard from him is what I say in the world. 3821 And they knew not that he meant by that the Father. 3922 Jesus said unto them again, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then ye shall know that I am he: and I do nothing of myself, but as my Father taught me, so I speak. 4023 And he that sent me is with me; and my Father hath not left me alone; because I do what is pleasing to him at all times. 4124 And while he was saying that, many believed in him.

4225 And Jesus said to those Jews that believed in him, If ye abide in my words, truly ye are my disciples: 4326 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 4427 They said unto him, We are the seed of Abraham, and have never served any man in the way of slavery: how then sayest thou, Ye shall be free children? 4528 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that doeth a sin is a slave of sin. 4629 And the slave doth not remain for ever in the house; but the son remaineth for ever. 4730 And if the Son set you free, truly ye shall be free children. 48 I know that ye are the seed of Abraham; but ye seek to slay me, because ye are unable for my word. 4931 And what I saw with my Father, I say: and what ye saw with your father, ye do. 5032 They answered and said unto him, Our father is Abraham. Jesus said unto them, If ye were the children of Abraham, ye would do the deeds of Abraham. 5133 Now, behold, ye seek to kill me, a man that speak⁴⁴¹ with you⁴⁴² the truth, that I heard from God: this did Abraham not do. And ye do the deeds of your father. 5236 They said unto him, We were not born of fornication;⁴⁴³ we have one Father, who is God. 5338 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: I proceeded and came⁴⁴⁴ from God; and it was not of my own self that I came,⁴⁴⁵ but he sent me. 5441 Why then do ye not know my word? Because ye cannot hear my word. 5542 Ye are from the father, the devil,⁴⁴⁶ and the lust of your father do ye desire to do, who from the beginning is a slayer of men, and in the truth standeth not, because the truth is not in him. And when he speaketh untruth, he speaketh from himself: for he is a liar, and the father of untruth. 5644 And I who speak the truth, ye believe me not. 5745 Who of you rebuketh me for a sin? And if I speak the truth, ye do not believe me.⁴⁴⁷ 5847 Whosoever is of God heareth the words of God: therefore do ye not hear, because ye are not of God. 5948 The Jews answered and said unto him, Did we not say well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast demons? 6049 Jesus said unto them, As for me, I have not a devil; but my Father do I honour, and ye dishonour me. 6150 I seek not my

glory: here is one who seeketh and judgeth.

Section XXXVI.

151 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever keepeth my word shall not see death for ever. 252 The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast demons. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, Whosoever keepeth my word shall not taste death for ever. 353 Art thou haply greater than our father Abraham, who is dead, and than the prophets, which are dead? whom makest thou thyself? 454 Jesus said unto them, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: my Father is he that glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is our⁴⁴⁸ God; 556 and yet ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say that I know him not, I should become a liar like you: but I know him, and keep his word. 657 Abraham your father longed to see my day; and he saw, and rejoiced. 758 The Jews said unto him, Thou art now not fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 859 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am. And they take⁴⁴⁹ stones to stone him: 961 but Jesus concealed himself, and went out of the temple. And he passed through them, and went his way.

1062 And as he passed, he saw a man blind from his mother's womb. 1163 And his disciples asked him, and said, Our Master, who sinned, this man, or his parents, so that he was born blind?⁴⁵⁰ 1265 Jesus said unto them, Neither did he sin, nor his parents: but that the works of God may be seen in him.⁴⁵¹ 1367 It is incumbent on me to do the deeds of him that sent me, while it is day: a night will come, and no man will be able to busy himself. 1468 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. 1569 And when he said that, he spat upon the ground, and made clay of his spittle, and smeared it on the eyes of the blind man, and said unto him, 1670 Go and wash thyself in the pool⁴⁵² of Siloam.⁴⁵³ 1773 And he went and washed, and came seeing. And his neighbours, which saw him of old begging, said, Is not this he that was sitting begging? 1874 And some said, It is he; and others said, Nay, but he resembles him much. 1975 He said, I am he. They said unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 2076 He answered and said unto them, A man named Jesus made clay, and smeared it on my eyes, and said unto me, Go and wash in the water of Siloam: and I went and washed, and received sight.⁴⁵⁴ 2178 They said unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not. 2279 And they brought him that was previously blind to the Pharisees. 2380 And the day in which Jesus made clay and opened with it his eyes was a sabbath day. 2481 And again the Pharisees asked him, How didst thou receive sight? And he said unto them, He put clay on mine eyes, and I washed, and received sight. 2582 The people⁴⁵⁵ of the Pharisees said, This man is not from God, for he keepeth not the sabbath. And others said, How can a man that is a sinner do these signs? And there came to be a division amongst them. 2684 And again they said to that blind man, Thou, then, what sayest thou of him that opened for thee thine eyes? He said unto them, I say that he is a prophet. 2785 And the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he was blind, and received sight, until they summoned the parents of him who received sight, and asked them, 2886 Is this⁴⁵⁶ your son, of whom ye said that he was born blind? how then, behold, doth he now see? 2988 His parents answered and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 3089 but how he has come to see now, or who it is that opened his eyes, we know not: and he also has reached his prime; ask him, and he will speak for himself. 3190 This said his parents, because they were fearing the Jews: and the Jews decided, that if any man should confess of him that he was the Messiah, they would put him out of the synagogue. 3291 For this reason said his parents, He hath reached his prime; ask him. 3392 And

they called the man a second time, him that was blind, and said unto him, Praise God: we know that this man is a sinner. 3493 He answered and said unto them, Whether he be a sinner, I know not: I know one thing, that I was blind, and I now see. 3594 They said unto him again, What did he unto thee? how opened he for thee thine eyes? 3695 He said unto them, I said unto you, and ye did not hear: what⁴⁵⁷ wish ye further to hear? ye also, do ye wish to become disciples to him? 3797 And they reviled him, and said unto him, Thou art the disciple⁴⁵⁸ of that man; but as for us, we are the disciples of Moses. 3899 And we know that God spake unto Moses: but this man, we know not whence he is. 39100 The man answered and said unto them, From this is the wonder, because ye know not whence he is, and mine eyes hath he opened. 40101 And we know that God heareth not the voice of sinners: but whosoever feareth him, and doeth his will, him he heareth. 41102 From eternity hath it not been heard of, that a man opened the eyes of a blind man, who had been born in blindness. 42103 If then this man were not from God, he could not do that. 43104 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast all of thee born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they put him forth without.

44105 And Jesus heard of his being put forth without, and found him, and said unto him, Dost thou believe in the Son of God? 45106 He that was made whole answered and said, Who is he, my Lord, that I may believe in him? 46107 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast seen him, and he that speaketh to thee is he. 47108 And he said, I believe, my Lord. And he fell down worshipping him.

Section XXXVII.

1109 And Jesus said, To judge the world am I come, so that they that see not may see, and they that see may become blind. 2110 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard that, and they said unto him, Can it be that we are blind? 3111 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should not have sin: but now ye say, We see: and because of this your sin remaineth.⁴⁵⁹ 4113 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever entereth not into the fold of the sheep by the door, but goeth up from another place, that man is a thief and a stealer. 5114 But he that entereth by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. 6115 And therefore⁴⁶⁰ the keeper of the door openeth for him the door; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his sheep⁴⁶¹ by their names, and they go forth unto him. 7118 And when he putteth forth his sheep, he goeth before them, and his sheep⁴⁶² follow him: because they know his voice. 8120 And after a stranger will the sheep not go, but they flee from him: because they hear not the voice of a stranger. 9121 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they knew not what he was saying unto them. 10122 Jesus said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 11123 And all that came are thieves and stealers: but the sheep heard them not. 12124 I am the door: and if a man enter by me, he shall live, and shall go in and go out, and shall find pasture. 13125 And the stealer cometh not, save that he may steal, and kill, and destroy: but I came that they might have life, and that they might have the thing that is better.⁴⁶³ 14127 I am the good shepherd; and the good shepherd giveth himself⁴⁶⁴ for his sheep. 15129 But the hireling, who is not a shepherd, and whose the sheep⁴⁶⁵ are not, when he seeth the wolf as it cometh, leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, and the wolf cometh, and snatcheth away the sheep, and scattereth⁴⁶⁶ them: 16132 and the hireling fleeth because he is an hireling, and hath no care for the sheep. 17133 I am the good shepherd; 18134 and I know what is mine, and what is mine knoweth me, as my Father knoweth me, and I know my Father; and I give myself⁴⁶⁷ for the sheep. 19136 And I have other sheep also, that are not of this flock: them also I must invite, and they shall hear my voice; and all the sheep shall be one, and the

shepherd one. 20137 And therefore doth my Father love me, because I give my life, that I may take it again. 21138 No man taketh it from me, but I leave it of my own choice. And I have the right to leave it, and have the right also to take it. And this commandment did I receive of my Father.

22139 And there occurred a disagreement among the Jews because of these sayings. 23140 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is afflicted with madness;468 why listen ye to him? 24142 And others said, These sayings are not those of men possessed with demons. Can a demon haply open the eyes of a blind man? 25143 And the feast of the dedication came on at Jerusalem: and it was winter. 26144 And Jesus was walking in the temple in the porch of Solomon. 27145 The Jews therefore surrounded him, and said unto him, Until when dost thou make our hearts anxious? 28146 If thou art the Messiah, tell us plainly. He answered and said unto them, I told you, and ye believe not: 29147 and the deeds that I do in my Father's name bear witness to me. 30148 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep,469 as I said unto you. 31150 And my sheep470 hear my voice, and I know them, and they come after me: and I give them eternal life; and they shall not perish for ever, nor shall any man snatch them out of my hands.471 32153 For the Father, who hath given them unto me, is greater than all; and no man is able to take them from the hand of my472 Father. 3315533 I and my Father are one. 34156 And the Jews took stones to stone him. 35157 Jesus said unto them, Many good deeds from my Father have I shewed you; because of which473 of them, then, do ye stone me? 36159 The Jews said unto him, Not for the good deeds do we stone thee, but because thou blasphemest; and, whilst thou art a man, makest thyself God. 37160 Jesus said unto them, Is it not thus written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? 38161 And if he called those gods-for474 to them came the word of God (and it is not possible in475 the scripture that anything should be undone)-39164 he then, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, do ye say that he blasphemeth; because I said unto you, I am the Son of God? 40165 If then I do not the deeds of my Father, ye believe me not.476 41167 But if I do, even if ye believe not me, believe the deeds: that ye may know and believe that my Father is in me, and I in my Father. 42168 And they sought again to take him: and he went forth out of their hands.

43169 And he went beyond Jordan to the place where John was baptizing formerly; and abode there. 44170 And many people came unto him; and they said, John did not work even one sign: but all that John said of this man is truth. 45171 And many believed in him. 46172 And there was a sick man, named Lazarus, of the village of Bethany, the brother of Mary and Martha. 47173 And Mary was she that anointed with sweet ointment the feet of Jesus, and wiped them with her hair; and Lazarus, who was sick, was the brother of this woman.477 48175 And his sisters sent unto Jesus, and said unto him, Our Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. 49176 But Jesus said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glorifying of God, that the Son of God may be glorified because of it. 50177 And Jesus loved Martha, and Mary, and Lazarus. 51178 And when he heard that he was sick, he abode in the place where he was two days. 52179 And after that, he said unto his disciples, Come, let us go into Judaea. 53180 His disciples said unto him, Our Master, now the Jews desire to stone thee; and goest thou again thither? 54181 Jesus said unto them, Is not the day of twelve hours? 55182 If then a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of the world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no lamp in him. 56183 This said Jesus: and after that, he said unto them, Lazarus our friend hath fallen asleep; but I am going to awaken him. 57184 His disciples said unto him, Our Lord, if he hath fallen asleep, he will recover. 58185 But Jesus said that concerning his death: while they supposed that he spake of

lying down to sleep. 59186 Then Jesus said unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. 60187 And I am glad that I was not there for your sakes, that ye may believe; but let us go thither. 61188 Thomas, who is called Thama,⁴⁷⁸ said to the disciples, his companions, Let us also go, and die with him.

Section XXXVIII.

1190 And Jesus came to Bethany, and found him already four days in the grave. 2191 And Bethany was beside Jerusalem, 3192 and its distance from it was a sum of fifteen furlongs;⁴⁷⁹ and many of the Jews came unto Mary and Martha, to comfort their heart because of their brother. 4194 And Martha, when she heard that Jesus had come, went out to meet him: but Mary was sitting in the house. 5195 Martha then said unto Jesus, My Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 6196 But I know now that, whatever thou shalt ask of God, he will give thee. 7197 Jesus said unto her, Thy brother shall rise. 8198 Martha said unto him, I know that he shall rise in the resurrection at the last day. 9199 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: whosoever believeth in me, even though he die, he shall live: 10200 and every living one that believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? 11201 She said unto him, Yea, my Lord: I believe that thou art the Messiah, the Son of God, that cometh into the world. 12202 And when she had said that, she went and called Mary her sister secretly, and said unto her, Our Master hath come, and summoneth thee. 13203 And Mary, when she heard, rose in haste, and came unto him. 14204 (And Jesus then had not come into the village, but was in the place where Martha met him.) 15205 And the Jews also that were with her in the house, to comfort her, when they saw that Mary rose up and went out in haste, went after her, because they supposed that she was going to the tomb to weep. 16206 And Mary, when she came to where Jesus was, and saw him, fell at his feet, and said unto him, If thou hadst been here, my Lord, my brother had not died. 17207 And Jesus came; and when he saw her weeping, and the Jews that were with her weeping, he was troubled⁴⁸⁰ in himself, and sighed; and he said, 18209 In what place have ye laid him? And they said unto him, Our Lord, come and see. 19210 And the tears of Jesus came.⁴⁸¹ 20212 The Jews therefore said, See the greatness of his love for him! 21213 But some of them said, Could not this man, who opened the eyes of that blind man, have caused that this man also should not die? 22214 And Jesus came to the place of burial, being troubled within himself. And the place of burial was a cave, and a stone was placed at its door. 23215 Jesus therefore said, Take these stones away. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, said unto him, My Lord, he hath come to stink for some time: he hath been⁴⁸² four days dead. 24217 Jesus said unto her, Did not I say unto thee, If thou believest, thou shall see the glory of God? 25218 And they removed those stones. And Jesus lifted his eyes on high, and said, My Father, I thank thee Since thou didst hear me. 26219 And I know that thou at all times hearest me: but I say this unto thee because of this multitude that is standing, that they may believe that thou didst send me. 27220 And when he had said that, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 28221 And that dead man came out, having his hands and feet bound with bandages, and his face wrapped in a scarf. Jesus said unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

29222 And many of the Jews which came unto Mary, when they saw the deed of Jesus, believed in him. 30223 But some of them went to the Pharisees, and informed them of all that Jesus did.

31224 And the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered, and said, What shall we do? for lo, this man doeth many signs. 32225 And if we leave him thus, all men will believe in him: and the

Romans will come and take our country and people. 33226 And one of them, who was called Caiaphas, the chief priest he was in that year, said unto them, 34227 Ye know not anything, nor consider that it is more advantageous for us that one man should die instead of the people, and not that the whole people perish. 35228 And this he said not of himself: but because he was the chief priest of⁴⁸³ that year, he prophesied that Jesus was to die instead of the people; 36230 and not instead of the people alone, but that he might gather the scattered children of God together. 37231 And from that day they considered how to kill him. 38232 And Jesus did not walk openly amongst the Jews, but departed thence to a place near the wilderness, to a town⁴⁸⁴ called Ephraim; and he was there, going about with his disciples. 39234 And the passover of the Jews was near: and many went up from the villages unto Jerusalem before the feast, to purify themselves. 40235 And they sought for Jesus, and said one to another in the temple, What think ye of his holding back from the feast? 41236 And the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any man knew in what place he was, he should reveal it to them, that they might take him.

42237 And when the days of his going up were accomplished, he prepared himself that he might go⁴⁸⁵ to Jerusalem. 43239 And he sent messengers before him, and departed,⁴⁸⁶ and entered into a village⁴⁸⁷ of Samaria, that they might make ready for him. 44242 And they received him not, because he⁴⁸⁸ was prepared for going to Jerusalem. 45244 And when James and John his disciples saw it, they said unto him, Our Lord, wilt thou that we speak, and fire come down from heaven, to extirpate them, as did Elijah also? 46245 And Jesus turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not of what spirit ye are. 47246 Verily the Son of man did not come to destroy lives, but to give life. And they went to another village.

Section XXXIX.

1247 And Jesus six days before the passover⁴⁸⁹ came to Bethany, where was Lazarus, whom Jesus raised from among the dead. 2249 And they made⁴⁹⁰ a feast for him there: 3251 and Martha was serving; while Lazarus was one of them that sat with him. 4252 And at the time of Jesus' being at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, great multitudes of the Jews heard that Jesus was there: and they came, not because of Jesus alone, but that they might look also on Lazarus, whom he raised from among the dead. 5253 And the chief priests considered how they might kill Lazarus also; 6254 because many of the Jews were going on his account, and believing in Jesus. 7255 And Mary took a case of the ointment of fine nard, of great price, and opened it, and poured it out on the head of Jesus as he was reclining; and she anointed his feet, and wiped them with her hair: 80 and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. 91 But Judas Iscariot, one of the disciples, he that was to betray him, said, 102 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given unto the poor? 113 This he said, not because of his care for the poor, but because he was a thief, and the chest was with him, and what was put⁴⁹¹ into it he used to bear. And that displeased the rest of the disciples also within themselves, and they said, 125 Why went this ointment to waste? 136 It was possible that it should be sold for much, and the poor be given it. 147 And they were angry with⁴⁹² Mary. And Jesus perceived it, and said unto them, Leave her; why molest ye her? a good work hath she accomplished on me: for the day of my burial kept she it. 159 At all times the poor are with you, and when ye wish ye can do them a kindness: but I am not at all times with you. 1610 And for this cause, when she poured⁴⁹³ this ointment on my body, it is as if she did it for my burial, and anointed my body beforehand. 1712

And verily I say unto you, In every place where this my gospel shall be proclaimed in all the world, what she did shall be told for a memorial of her. 1813 And when Jesus said that, he went out leisurely to go to Jerusalem, 1914 And when he arrived at Bethphage and at Bethany, beside the mount which is called the mount of Olives, 2015 Jesus sent two of his disciples, and he said unto them, Go into this village that is opposite you: 2116 and when ye enter it, ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with him,⁴⁹⁴ which no man ever yet mounted: loose him, and bring them⁴⁹⁵ unto me. 2219 And if any man say unto you, Why loose ye them? say unto him thus, We seek them for our Lord; and straightway send them hither. 2320 All this was, that what was said in the prophet might be fulfilled, which said, 2421 Say ye unto the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, Meek, and riding upon an ass, And upon a colt the foal of an ass.

2522 And the disciples did not know this at that time: but after that Jesus was glorified, his disciples remembered that these things were written of him, and that this they had done unto him. 2623 And when the two disciples went, they found as he had said unto them, and they did as Jesus charged them. 2724 And when they loosed them, their owners said unto them, Why loose ye them? 2825 They said unto them, We seek them for our Lord. 2926 And they let them go. And they brought the ass and the colt, and they placed on the colt their garments; and Jesus mounted it. 3027 And most of the multitudes spread their garments on the ground before him: and others cut branches from the trees, and threw them in the way. 3128 And when he neared his⁴⁹⁶ descent from the mount of Olives, all the disciples began to rejoice and to praise God with a loud voice for all the powers which they had seen; and they said, Praise in the highest; Praise to the Son of David: 3230 Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; and blessed⁴⁹⁷ is the kingdom that cometh, that of⁴⁹⁸ our father David: 3333 Peace in heaven, and praise in the highest.

3434 And a great multitude, that which came to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took young palm branches,⁴⁹⁹ and went forth to meet him, and cried and said, Praise: 3536 Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, the King of Israel. 3637 Certain therefore of the Pharisees from among the multitudes said unto him, Our Master, rebuke thy disciples. 3738 He said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If these were silent, the stones would cry out.

3839 And when he drew near, and saw the city, he wept over it, and said, 3940 Would that thou hadst known the things that are⁵⁰⁰ for thy peace, in this thy day! now that is hidden from thine eyes. 4042 There shall come unto thee days when thine enemies shall encompass thee, and straiten thee from every quarter, and shall get possession of⁵⁰¹ thee, 4144 and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee a stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

4245 And when he entered into Jerusalem, the whole city was agitated, and they said, 4346 Who is this? And the multitudes said, This is Jesus, the prophet that is from Nazareth of Galilee. 4447 And the multitude which was with him bare witness that he called Lazarus from the grave, and raised him from among the dead. 4548 And for this cause great multitudes went out to meet him, because they heard the sign which he did.

Section XL.

149 And when Jesus entered the temple, they brought unto him blind and lame: and he healed them. 250 But when the chief priests and the Pharisees saw the wonders that he did, and the children that were crying in the temple and saying, Praise be to the Son of David: it distressed them, and they said, Hearst thou not what these say? 351 Jesus said unto them, Yea: did ye not read long ago, From the mouths of children and infants thou hast chosen my praise? 452 And the Pharisees said one to another, Behold, do ye not see that nothing availeth us? for lo, the whole world hath followed him.

553 And there were among them certain Gentiles also, which had come up to worship at the feast: 654 these therefore came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, and said unto him, My lord, we wish to see Jesus. 755 And Philip came and told Andrew: and Andrew and Philip told Jesus. 856 And Jesus answered and said unto them, The hour is come nigh, in which the Son of man is to be glorified. 957 Verily, verily, I say unto you, A grain of wheat, if it fall not and die in the earth, remaineth alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. 1058 He that loveth his life⁵⁰² destroyeth it; and he that hateth his life⁵⁰³ in this world shall keep it unto the life eternal. 1161 If a man serve me, he will follow me; and where I am, there shall my servant be also: and whosoever serveth me, the Father will honour him. 1262 Now is my soul troubled: and what shall I say? My Father, deliver me from this hour. 1363 But for this cause came I unto this hour. My Father, glorify thy name. And a voice was heard from heaven, I have glorified it, and shall glorify it. 1464 And the multitude that were standing heard, and said, This is thunder: and others said, An angel speaketh to him. 1565 Jesus answered and said unto them, Not because of me was this voice, but because of you. 1666 Now is the judgement of this world; and the prince of this world shall now be cast forth. 1767 And I, when I am lifted up from the earth, shall draw every man unto me. 1868 This he said, that he might shew by what manner of death he should die. 1969 The multitudes said unto him, We have heard out of the law that the Messiah abideth for ever: how then sayest thou, that the Son of man is to be lifted up? who is this, the Son of man? 2070 Jesus said unto them, Another little while is the light with you. Walk so long as ye have light, lest the darkness overtake you; for he that walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 2171 So long as ye have light, believe the light, that ye may be the children of the light.

227222 And when certain of the Pharisees asked of Jesus, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered and said unto them, The kingdom of God cometh not with expectation: 2373 neither shall they say, Lo, it is here! nor, Lo, it is there! for the kingdom of God is within you.

2474 And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple; and at night he used to go out, and pass the night in the mount called the mount of Olives. 2575 And all the people came⁵⁰⁴ to him in the morning in the temple, to hear his word. 2677 Then spoke Jesus unto the multitudes and his disciples, and said unto them, 2778 On the seat of Moses are seated the scribes and Pharisees: 2879 everything that they say unto you now to keep, keep and do: but according to their deeds do ye not; for they say, and do not. 2980 And they bind heavy burdens, and lay them on the shoulders of the people; while they with one of their fingers will not come near⁵⁰⁵ them. 3082 But all their deeds they do to make a shew before men. 3183 And all the multitude were hearing that with pleasure.

3284 And in the course of his teaching he said unto them, Guard yourselves from the scribes, who desire to walk in robes, 3385 and love salutation in the marketplaces, and sitting in the highest

places of the synagogues, and at feasts in the highest parts of the rooms: 3486 and they broaden their amulets, and lengthen the cords of their cloaks, and love that they should be called by men, My master, and devour widows' houses, because⁵⁰⁶ of their prolonging' their prayers; 3588 these then shall receive greater judgement. 3689 But ye, be ye not called masters:⁵⁰⁷ for your master is one; all ye are brethren. 3791 Call not then to yourselves any one⁵⁰⁸ father on earth: for your Father is one, who is in heaven. 3893 And be not called directors: for your director is one, even the Messiah. 3994 He that is great among you shall be unto you a minister. 4095 Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and whosoever shall abase himself shall be exalted.

4196 Woe unto you, Pharisees! because ye love the highest places in the synagogues, and salutation in the marketplaces.

4297 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye devour widows' houses, because⁵⁰⁹ of your prolonging your prayers: for this reason then ye shall receive greater judgement.

4399 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye have shut the kingdom of God before men.

44100 Woe unto you that know the law! for ye concealed the keys of know- ledge: ye enter not, and those that are entering ye suffer not to enter.

45101 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because⁵¹⁰ ye compass land and sea to draw⁵¹¹ one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him a son of hell twice as much⁵¹² as yourselves.

46105 Woe unto you, ye blind! guides! because ye say, Whosoever sweareth by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gold that is in the temple, shall be condemned.⁵¹³ 47107 Ye blind foolish ones: which is greater, the gold, or the temple which sanctifieth the gold? 48108 And, Whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the offering that is upon it, shall be condemned.⁵¹⁴ 49110 Ye blind foolish ones: which is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth the offering? 50111 Whosoever then sweareth by the altar, hath sworn by it, and by all that is upon it. 51112 And whosoever sweareth by the temple, hath sworn by it, and by him that is dwelling in it. 52113 And whosoever sweareth by heaven, hath sworn by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth upon it.

53114 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye tithe mint and rue and dill and cummin and all herbs, and ye leave the important matters of the law, judgement, and mercy, and faith, and the love of God: this ought ye to do, and not to leave that undone. 54115 Ye blind guides, which strain out a gnat, and swallow⁵¹⁵ camels.

55117 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, while the inside of them is full of injustice and wrong. 56118 Ye blind Pharisees, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, then shall the outside of them be cleansed.

57119 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye resemble whited sepulchres, which appear⁵¹⁶ from the outside beautiful, but within full of the bones of the dead, and all uncleanness. 58121 So ye also from without appear unto men like the righteous, but within ye are

full of wrong and hypocrisy.

59122 One of the scribes answered and said unto him, Teacher, in this saying of thine thou art casting a slur on us. 60123 He said, And to you also, ye scribes, woe! for ye lade men with heavy burdens, and ye with one of your fingers come not near⁵¹⁷ those burdens.

61125 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, which your fathers killed, and adorn the burying-places of the righteous, and say, ⁶²¹²⁶ If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. ⁶³¹²⁷ Wherefore, behold, ye witness against yourselves, that ye are the children of those that slew the prophets. ⁶⁴¹²⁸ And ye also, ye fill up the measure⁵¹⁸ of your fathers. ⁶⁵¹³⁰ Ye serpents, ye children of vipers, where shall ye flee from the judgement of Gehenna?

Section XLI.

1131 Therefore, behold, I, the wisdom of God, am sending unto you prophets, and apostles, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall slay and crucify; and some of them ye shall beat in your synagogues, and persecute⁵¹⁹ from city to city: ²¹³³ that there may come on you all the blood of the righteous that hath been poured upon the ground⁵²⁰ from the blood of Abel the pure to the blood of Zachariah the son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple⁵²¹ and the altar. ³¹³⁶ Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation,⁵²²

⁴¹³⁸ O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, slayer of the prophets, and stoner of them that are sent unto her! how many times did I wish to gather thy children, as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! ⁵¹³⁹ Your house shall be left over you desolate. ⁶¹⁴⁰ Verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. ⁷¹⁴¹ And many of the rulers also believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they were not confessing him, lest they be put⁵²³ out of the synagogue: ⁸¹⁴³ and they loved the praise of men more than the praising of God. ⁹¹⁴⁴ And Jesus cried and said, Whosoever believeth in me, believeth not in me, but in him that sent me. ¹⁰¹⁴⁵ And whosoever seeth me hath seen him that sent me. ¹¹¹⁴⁶ I am come a light⁵²⁴ into the world, and so every one that believeth in me abideth not in the darkness. ¹²¹⁴⁸ And whosoever heareth my sayings, and keepeth them not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to give the world life.⁵²⁵ ¹³¹⁵⁰ Whosoever wrongeth⁵²⁶ me, and receiveth not my sayings, there is one that judgeth him: the word that I spake, it shall judge him at the last day. ¹⁴¹⁵² I from myself did not speak: but the Father which sent me, he hath given me commandment,⁵²⁷ what I should say, and what I should speak; and I know that his commandment⁵²⁸ is eternal life ¹⁵¹⁵⁵ The things that I say now, as my Father hath said unto me, even so I say.

¹⁶¹⁵⁶ And when he said that unto them, the scribes and Pharisees began their evil-doing, being angry with him, and finding fault with his sayings, and harassing⁵²⁹ him in many things; ¹⁷¹⁵⁸ seeking to catch something from his mouth, that they might be able to calumniate him. ¹⁸¹⁵⁹ And when there gathered together myriads of great multitudes, which almost trode one upon another, Jesus began to say unto his disciples, Preserve yourselves from the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. ¹⁹¹⁶⁰ For there is nothing concealed, that shall not be revealed: nor hid, that shall not be known. ²⁰¹⁶¹ Everything that ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken secretly in the ears in the inner chambers shall be proclaimed on the

roofs.

21162 This said Jesus, and he went and hid himself from them. 22163 But notwithstanding his having done all these signs before them, 23164 they believed not in him: that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, who said, My Lord, who is he that hath believed to hear us? And the arm of the Lord, to whom hath it appeared?

24165 And for this reason it is not possible for them to believe, because Isaiah also said,

25166 They have blinded their eyes, and made dark their heart; That they may not see with their eyes, and understand with their heart, And turn, So that I should heal them.

26167 This said Isaiah when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

27168 And when Jesus went out of the temple, certain of his disciples came forward to shew⁵³⁰ him the buildings of the temple, 28170 and its beauty and greatness, and the strength of the stones that were laid in it, and the elegance of its building, and that it was adorned with noble stones and beautiful colours. 29171 Jesus answered and said unto them, See ye these great buildings? 30172 verily I say unto you, Days will come, when there shall not be left here a stone upon another, that shall not be cast down.

31173 And two days before⁵³¹ the passover of unleavened bread, the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by deceit,⁵³² and kill him: 32176 and they said, It shall not be at the feast, lest the people be agitated.

33177 And when Jesus sat on the mount of Olives opposite the temple, his disciples, Simon Cephas and James and John and Andrew, came forward unto him, and said unto him between themselves and him, 34178 Teacher, tell us when that shall be, and what is the sign of thy coming and the end of the world. 35179 Jesus answered and said unto them, Days will come, when ye shall long to see one of the days of the Son of 36180 man, and shall not behold. 37181 Take heed lest any man lead you astray. Many shall come in my name, and say, 38182 I am the Messiah; and they shall say, The time is come near, and shall lead many astray: go not therefore after them. 39183 And when ye hear of wars and tidings of insurrections, see to it, be⁵³³ not agitated: for these things must first be; only the end is not yet come. 40185 Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and great earthquakes shall be in one place and another, and there shall be famines and deaths and agitations: 41186 and there shall be fear and terror and great signs that⁵³⁴ shall appear from heaven, and there shall be great storms. 42188 All these things are the beginning of travail. 43189 But before all of that, they shall lay hands upon you, and persecute you, and deliver you unto the synagogues and into prisons, and bring you before kings and judges for my name's sake. 44190 And that shall be unto you for a witness. 45191 But first must my gospel be preached unto all nations. 46192 And when they bring you into the synagogues before the rulers and the authorities, be not anxious beforehand how ye shall answer for yourselves, or what ye shall say: 47193 because it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Spirit. 48194 Lay it to your heart, not to be anxious before the time what ye shall say: 49195 and I shall⁵³⁵ give you understanding and wisdom,⁵³⁶ which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay. 50198 And then shall they deliver you unto constraint, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations because of my name. 51199 And then shall many go astray,⁵³⁷ and they shall hate one another, and deliver one another unto death. 52201 And your parents, and your brethren,

and your kinsfolk, and your friends shall deliver you up, and shall slay some of you. 53202 But a lock of hair from your heads shall not perish. 54203 And by your patience ye shall gain⁵³⁸ your souls. 55205 And many men,⁵³⁹ false prophets, shall arise, and lead many astray. 56207 And because of the abounding of iniquity, the love of many shall wax cold. 57208 But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. 58209 And this, the⁵⁴⁰ gospel of the kingdom, shall be preached in all the world for a testimony to all nations; and then shall come the end of all.

Section XLII.

1211 But when ye see Jerusalem with the army compassing it about, then know that its desolation is come near. 2212 Those then that are in Judaea at that time shall flee to the mountain; and those that are within her shall flee; and those that are in the villages shall not enter her. 3213 For these days are the days of vengeance, that all that is written may be fulfilled. 4214 And when ye see the unclean sign of desolation,⁵⁴¹ spoken of in Daniel the prophet, standing in the pure place, he that readeth shall understand, 5216 and then he that is in Judaea shall flee in to the mountain: 6217 and let him that is on the roof not go down, nor enter in to take anything from his house: 7218 and let him that is in the field not turn behind him to take his garment. 8219 Woe to them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath against this nation. 9220 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword,⁵⁴² and shall be taken captive to every land: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the nations, until the times of the nations be ended. 10222 Then if any man say unto you, The Messiah is here; or, Lo, he is there; believe him not: 11223 there shall rise then false Messiahs and prophets of lying, and shall do signs and wonders, in order that they may lead astray even the elect also, if they be able. 12224 But as for you, beware: for I have acquainted you with everything beforehand. 13225 If then they say unto you, Lo, he is in the desert; go not out, lest ye be taken: and if they say unto you, Lo, he is in the chamber; believe not. 14226 And as the lightning appeareth from the east, and is seen unto the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. 15227 But first he must suffer much and be rejected by this generation.⁵⁴³ 16229 Pray therefore that your flight be not in winter, nor on a sabbath: 17230 there shall be then great tribulation,⁵⁴⁴ the like of which there hath not been from the beginning of the world till now, nor shall be. 18232 And except the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh would have lived: but because of the elect, whom he elected, he shortened those days. 19233 And there shall be signs in the sun and the moon and the stars; and upon the earth affliction⁵⁴⁵ of the nations, and rubbing of hands for the confusion⁵⁴⁶ of the noise of the sea, and an earthquake: 20236 the souls of men shall go forth from fear of that which is to come upon the earth. 21237 And in those days, straightway after the distress of those days, the sun shall become dark, and the moon shall not shew its light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be convulsed: and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: 22238 and at that time all the tribes of the earth shall wail, and look unto the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and much glory. 23239 And he shall send his angels with the great trumpet, and they shall gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.⁵⁴⁷ 24241 But when these things begin to be, be of good cheer, and lift up your heads; for your salvation⁵⁴⁸ is come near.

25243 Learn the example of the fig tree: when it letteth down its branches,⁵⁴⁹ and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is come; 26245 so ye also, when ye see these things begun to be, know ye that the kingdom of God hath arrived at the door. 27246 Verily I say unto you, This

generation shall not pass away, until all these things shall be. 28247 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my sayings shall not pass away.

29248 Take heed to yourselves, that your hearts become not heavy with inordinate desire,⁵⁵⁰ and drunkenness, and the care of the world at any time, and that day come upon you suddenly: 30250 for it is as a shock that shocks all the inhabitants that are on the face of the whole earth. 31251 Watch at all times, and pray, that ye may be worthy to escape from all the things that are to be, and that ye may stand before the Son of man. 32252 Of that day and of that hour hath no man learned, not even the angels of heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. 33253 See ye, and watch and pray: for ye know not when that time will be. 34254 It is as a man, who journeyed, and left his house, and gave his authority to his servants, and appointed every man to his work, and charged the porter to be wakeful. 35255 Be wakeful then:⁵⁵¹ since ye know not when the lord of the house cometh, in the evening, or in the middle of the night, or when the cock croweth, or in the morning; 361 lest he come unexpectedly, and find you sleeping. 372 The thing that I say unto you, unto all of you do I say it, Be ye watchful.

383 For as it was in the days of Noah, so shall the coming of the Son of man be. 394 As they were before the flood eating and drinking, and taking wives, and giving wives to men, 405 until the day in which Noah entered into the ark, and they perceived not till the flood came, and took them all; so shall the coming of the Son of man be. 416 And as it was in the days of Lot; they were eating and drinking, and selling and buying, and planting and building, 427 on the day in which Lot went out from Sodom, and the Lord rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all: 438 so shall it be in the day in which the Son of man is revealed.⁵⁵² 4410 And in that day, whosoever is on the roof, and his garments⁵⁵³ in the house, let him not go down to take them: and he that is in the field shall not turn behind him. 4512 Remember Lot's wife. 4613 Whosoever shall desire to save his life shall destroy it: but whosoever shall destroy his life shall save it. 4714 Verily I say unto you, In that night there shall be two on one bed; one shall be taken, and another left. 4815 And two women shall be grinding at one mill; one shall be taken, and another left. 4916 And two shall be in the field; one shall be taken, and another left. 5017 They answered and said unto him, To what place, our Lord? He said unto them, Where the body is, there will the eagles gather. 5118 Be attentive now: for ye know not at what hour your Lord cometh. 5219 Know this: if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have been attentive, and would not make it possible that his house should be broken through. 5320 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

Section XLIII.

121 Simon Cephas said unto him, Our Lord, is it to us that thou hast spoken this parable, or also to every man? 222 Jesus said unto him, Who, thinkest thou, is the servant, the master of the house,⁵⁵⁴ trusted with control,⁵⁵⁵ whom his lord set over his household, to give them their food in its season? 325 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord shall come and find having done so. 426 Verily I say unto you, He will set him over all that he hath. But if that evil servant say in his heart, 527 My lord delayeth his coming; 628 and shall begin to beat his servants and the maidservants of his lord, and shall begin to eat and to drink with the drunken; 729 the lord of that servant shall come in the day that he thinketh not, and in the hour that he knoweth not, and shall judge him, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites, and with those that are not faithful: 830 there shall be

weeping and gnashing of teeth.

931 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be like unto ten virgins, those that took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom and the bride. 1032 Five of them were 1133 wise, and five foolish. And those foolish ones took their lamps, and took not with them oil: 1234 but those wise ones took oil in vessels along with their lamps. 1335 When then the bridegroom delayed, they all slumbered and slept. 1436 But in the middle of the night there occurred a cry, Behold, the bridegroom cometh! Go forth therefore to meet him. 1537 Then all those virgins arose, and made ready their lamps. 1638 The foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. 1739 But those wise answered and said, Perhaps⁵⁵⁶ there will not be enough for us and you: but go ye to the sellers, and buy for yourselves. 1841 And when they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and those that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast: and the door was shut. 1942 And at last those other virgins also came and said, Our Lord, our Lord, open unto us. 2043 He answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 2144 Watch then, for ye know not that day nor that hour.

2245 It is as a man, who went on a journey, and called his servants, and delivered unto them his possessions. 2346 And unto one he gave five talents,⁵⁵⁷ and another two, and another one; every one according to his strength; and went on his journey forthwith. 2448 He then that received the five talents went and traded with them, and gained other five. 2549 And so also he of the two gained other two. 2650 But he that received the one went and digged in the earth, and hid the money of his lord. 2751 And after a long time the lord of those servants came, and took from them the account. 2852 And he that received five talents came near and brought other five, and said, My lord, thou gavest me five talents: lo, I have gained other five in addition to them. 2953 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: over a little hast thou been faithful, over much will I set thee: enter into the joy of thy lord. 3054 And he that had the two came near and said, My lord, thou gavest me two talents: lo, other two have I gained in addition to them. 3155 His lord said unto him, Good,⁵⁵⁸ thou faithful servant: over a little hast thou been faithful, over much will I set thee: enter into the joy of thy lord. 3257 And he also that received the one talent came forward and said, My lord, I knew thee that thou an a severe man, who reapest where thou sowest not, and gatherest where thou didst not scatter: 3358 and so I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: 3459 lo, thou hast what is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest me that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; 3560 it was incumbent on thee to put my money to the bank,⁵⁵⁹ and then I should come and seek it with its gains. 3662 Take now from him the talent, and give it to him that hath ten talents. 3763 Whosoever hath shall be given, and he shall have more: but he that hath not, even what he hath shall be taken from him. 3864 And the unprofitable servant, put him forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

3965 Your loins shall be girded, and your lamps lit; and ye shall be like the people that are looking for their lord, when he shall return from the feast; 4066 so that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may at once open unto him. 4167 Blessed are those servants, whom their lord shall come and find attentive: verily I say unto you, that he will gird his waist, and make them sit down, and pass through⁵⁶⁰ them and serve them. 4269 And if he come in the second watch, or the third, and find thus, blessed are those servants.

4370 But when the Son of man cometh in his glory, and all his pure angels with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: 4471 and he will gather before him all the nations, and separate them the one from the other, like the shepherd who separateth the sheep from the goats; 4572 and will set 561 the sheep on his right, and the goats on his left. 4674 Then shall the King say to those that are at his right, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundations 562 of the world: 4776 I hungered, and ye gave me to eat; and I thirsted, and ye gave me to drink; and I was a stranger, and ye took me in; 4877 and I was naked, and ye clothed me; and I was sick, and ye visited me; and I was in prison, and ye cared for me. 4978 Then shall those righteous say unto him, Our Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee to drink? 5079 And when saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 5180 And when saw we thee sick, or imprisoned, and cared for thee? 5281 The King shall answer and say 563 unto them, Verily I say unto you, What ye did to one of these my brethren, the little ones, ye did unto me. 5383 Then shall he say unto those that are on his left also, Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his hosts: 5484 I hungered, and ye fed me not; and I thirsted, and ye did not give me to drink; 5585 and I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; and I was naked, and ye clothed me not; and I was sick, and imprisoned, and ye visited me not. 5686 Then shall those also answer and say, Our Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or naked, or a stranger, or sick, or imprisoned, and did not minister unto thee? 5787 Then shall he answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, When ye did it not unto one of these little ones, ye did it not unto me also. 5888 And these shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous into eternal life.

Section XLIV.

189 And when Jesus 564 finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, 291 Ye know that after two days will be the passover, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified. 392 Then gathered together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the court of the chief priest, who was called Caiaphas; 493 and they took counsel together concerning Jesus, that they might seize him by subtilty, and kill him. 594 But they said, Not during the feast, lest there take place a disturbance among the people; for they feared the people.

695 And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, who was of the number of the twelve. 796 And he went away, and communed with the chief priests, and the scribes, and those that held command in the temple, and said unto them, What would ye pay me, and I will deliver him unto you? 897 And they, when they heard it, were pleased, and made ready 565 for him thirty pieces of money. 566 9100 And he promised 567 them, and from that time he sought an opportunity 568 that he might deliver unto them Jesus without the multitude. 10103 And on the first day of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, and said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready for thee that thou mayest eat the passover?

11104 And before the feast of the passover, Jesus knew that the hour was arrived for his departure from this world unto his Father; and he loved his own in this world, and to the last he loved them. 12105 And at the time of the feast, Satan put into the heart of Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, to deliver him up. 13106 And Jesus, because he knew that the Father had delivered into his hands everything, and that he came forth from the Father, 14107 and goeth unto God, rose from supper, and laid aside his garments; 15108 and took a towel, and girded his waist, and

poured water into a bason, and began to wash the feet of his disciples, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith his waist was girded. 16109 And when he came to Simon Cephas, Simon said unto him, Dost thou, my Lord, wash for me my feet? 17110 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do, now thou knowest not; but afterwards thou shall learn. 18111 Simon said unto him, Thou shalt never wash for me my feet. Jesus said unto him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 19112 Simon Cephas said unto him, Then, my Lord, wash not for me my feet alone, but my hands also and my head. 20113 Jesus said unto him, He that batheth⁵⁶⁹ needeth not to wash save his feet, whereas his whole body is clean: and ye also are clean, but not all of you. 21115 For Jesus knew him that should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

22116 So when he had washed their feet, he took his garments, and sat down, and said unto them, Know ye what I have done unto you? 23117 Ye call me, Master, and, Lord: and ye say well; so I am. 24118 If then I, now, who am your Lord and Master, have washed for you your feet, how needful is it that ye should wash one another's feet! 25119 This have I given you as an example, that as I have done to you so ye should do also. 26120 Verily, verily, I say unto you, No servant is greater than his lord; nor an apostle greater than he that sent him. 27121 If ye know that, ye are happy if ye do it. 28122 My saying this⁵⁷⁰ is not for all of you: for I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture might be fulfilled, He that eateth with me bread lifted against me his heel. 29124 Henceforth I say unto you before it come to pass, that, when it cometh to pass, ye may believe that I am he. 30125 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

31126 Who is the great one, he that sitteth, or he that serveth? is it not he that sitteth? 32127 I am among you as he that serveth. But ye are they that have continued with me in my temptations; 33128 I promise⁵⁷¹ you, as my Father promised⁵⁷² me, the kingdom, that ye may eat and drink at the table of my kingdom.

34131 And the first day⁵⁷³ came, the feast of unleavened bread, on which the Jews were wont⁵⁷⁴ to sacrifice⁵⁷⁵ the passover. 35135 And Jesus sent two of his disciples, Cephas and John, and said unto them, Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat. 36136 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we make ready for thee? 37137 He said unto them, Go, enter the city; and at the time of your entering, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water; follow him, and the place where he entereth, say to such an one, the master of the house, Our Master saith, My time is come, and at thy house I keep the passover. 38138 Where then is the lodging-place where I shall eat with my disciples? 39139 And he will shew you a large upper room spread and made ready: there then make ready for us. 40140 And his two disciples went out, and came to the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover as he had said unto them.

41141 And when the evening was come, and the time arrived, Jesus came and reclined, and the twelve apostles with him. 42142 And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: 43143 I say unto you, that henceforth I shall not eat it, until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

44144 Jesus said that, and was agitated⁵⁷⁶ in his spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, One of you, he that eateth with me, shall betray me. 45146 And they were very sorrowful; and they began to say unto him, one after another of them, Can it be 1, Lord? 46147 He

answered and said unto them, One of the twelve, he that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, will betray me. 47148 And lo, the hand of him that betrayeth me is on the table. 48149 And the Son of man goeth, as it is written of him: woe then to that man by whose hand the Son of man is betrayed! for it would have been better for that man had he not been born. 49150 And the disciples looked one on another, for they knew not to whom he referred; 50151 and they began to search among themselves, who that might be who was to do this.

Section XLV.

1152 And one of his disciples was sitting⁵⁷⁷ in his bosom, he whom Jesus loved. 2154 To him Simon Cephas beckoned, that he should ask him who this was, concerning whom he spake. 3155 And that disciple leaned⁵⁷⁸ on Jesus' breast, and said unto him, My Lord, who is this? 4157 Jesus answered and said, He to whom I shall dip bread, and give it. And Jesus dipped bread, and gave to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. 5158 And after the bread, Satan entered him. And Jesus said unto him, What thou desirest to do, hasten the doing of it. 6159 And no man of them that sat knew why he said this unto him. 7160 And some of them thought, because Judas had the box, that he was bidding him buy what would be needed for the feast; or, that he might pay something to the poor. 8161 Judas the betrayer answered and said, Can it be I, my Master? Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said 9162. And Judas took the bread straightway, and went forth without: and it was still night.

10163 And Jesus said, Now is the Son of man being glorified,⁵⁷⁹ and God is being glorified⁵⁸⁰ in him; and if God is glorified in him, 11166 God also will glorify him in him, and straightway will glorify him.

12167 And while they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and divided; and he gave to his disciples, and said unto them, Take and eat; this is my body. 13168 And he took a cup, and gave thanks, and blessed, and gave them, and said, Take and drink of it, all of you. 14169 And they drank of it, all of them. 15170 And he said unto them, This is my blood, the new covenant, that is shed for many for the forgiveness of sins. 16171 I say unto you, I shall not drink henceforth of this, the juice of the vine, until the day in which I drink⁵⁸¹ with you new wine in the kingdom of God. 17173 And thus do ye in remembrance of me. And Jesus said unto Simon, Simon, behold, Satan asketh that he may sift you like wheat: 18174 but I entreat⁵⁸² for thee, that thou lose not thy faith:⁵⁸³ and do thou, at some time, turn⁵⁸⁴ and strengthen thy brethren. 19178 My children, another little while am I with you. And ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; I say unto you now also. 20179 A new commandment I give you, that ye may love one another; and as I have loved you, so shall ye also love one another. 21180 By this shall every man know that ye are my disciples. if ye have love one to another. 22181 Simon Cephas said unto him, Our Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered and said unto him, Whither I go, thou canst not now follow me; but later thou shall come.

23182 Then said Jesus unto them, Ye all shall desert⁵⁸⁵ me this night:⁵⁸⁶ it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered. 24185 But after my rising, I shall go before you into Galilee. 25186 Simon Cephas answered and said unto him, My Lord, if every man desert thee, I shall at no time desert thee. 26187 I am with thee ready for imprisonment and for death. And my life will I give up for thee. 27188 Jesus said unto him, Wilt thou give up thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Thou shall to-day, during this night, before the cock crow twice,

three times deny me, that thou knowest me not. 28189 But Cephas said the more,587 Even if it lead to588 death with thee, I shall not deny thee, my Lord. And in like manner said all the disciples also.

29192 Then Jesus said unto them, Let not your hearts be troubled:589 believe in God, and believe in me. 30194 The stations590 in my Father's house are many, else I should have told591 you. 1592 go to prepare for you a place. 31198 And if I go to prepare for you a place, I shall return again, and take you unto me: and so where I am, there ye shall be also. 32199 And the place that I go ye know,593 and the way ye know.594 33202 Thomas said unto him, Our Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how is the way for us to the knowledge of that?595 34204 Jesus said unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: and no man cometh unto my Father, but through me. 35205 And if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father: and from henceforth ye know596 him, and have seen him. 36207 Philip597 said unto him, Our Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 37209 Jesus said unto him, Have I been all this time with you, and dost thou not know598 me, Philip?599 whosoever hath seen me hath seen the Father; how then sayest thou, Shew us the Father? 38212 Believest thou not that I am in my Father, and my Father in me? and the saying that I say, I say not of myself: but my Father who dwelleth in me, he doeth these deeds. 39213 Believe that I am in my Father, and my Father in me: or else believe for the sake of the deeds. 40214 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever believeth in me, the deeds that I do shall he do also; and more than that shall he do: I go unto the Father. 41215 And what ye shall ask in my name, I shall do unto you, that the Father may be glorified in his Song of Solomon. 42216 And if ye ask me is in my name, I will do it. 43217 If ye love me, keep my commandments. 44218 And I will entreat of my Father, and he will send unto you another Paraclete, that he may be with you for ever, even the Spirit of truth: whom the world cannot receive; for it hath not seen him, nor known him: 45219 but ye know him; for he hath dwelt600 with you, and is in you. 46221 I will not leave you orphans: I will come unto you. 47222 Another little while, and the world seeth me not; but ye see me that I live, and ye shall live also. 48223 And in that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

Section XLVI.

1224 Whosoever hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will shew myself unto him. Judas (not Iscariot) said unto him, 2225 My Lord, what is the purpose of thy intention to shew thyself to us, and not to the world? 3226 Jesus answered and said unto him, Whosoever loveth me will keep my word: and my Father will love him, and to him will we come, and make our601 abode with him. 4228 But he that loveth me not keepeth not my word: and this word that ye hear is not my word, but the Father's which sent me. 5229 This have I spoken unto you, while I was yet with you. 6230 But the Paraclete, the Holy Spirit, whom my Father will send in my name, he will teach you everything, and he will bring to your remembrance all that I say unto you. 7231 Peace I leave you; my peace I give unto you: and not as this world giveth, give I unto you. 8232 Let your heart not be troubled,602 nor fearful. Ye heard that I said unto you, that I go away, and come unto you. If603 ye loved me, ye would rejoice, that I go away to my Father: for my Father is greater than I. 9235 And now I say unto you before it come to pass, that, when it cometh to pass, ye may believe me. 10236 Now I will not speak with you much: the Archon of the world will come, and he will have nothing in me: 11237 but that the world may know that I love my Father, and as my Father charged me, so I

do.

12238 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purses, or wallets, and shoes,⁶⁰⁴ lacked ye perchance anything? They said unto him, Nothing. 13240 He said unto them, Henceforth, whosoever hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise the wallet also: and whosoever hath not a sword, shall sell his garment, and buy for himself a sword. 14241 I say unto you, that this scripture also must be fulfilled in me, that I should be reckoned⁶⁰⁵ with the transgressors: for all that is said of me is fulfilled in me. 15243 His disciples said unto him, Our Lord, lo, here are two swords. He said unto them, They are sufficient. 16244 Arise, let us go hence. And they arose, and praised, and went forth, and went, according to their custom, to the mount of Olives, he and his disciples.

17245 And he said unto them, I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 18246 Every branch that produceth not fruit in me, he taketh it: and that which giveth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it may give much fruit. 19247 Ye are already clean because of the word that I have spoken unto you. 20248 Abide in me, and I in you. And as the branch of the vine cannot produce fruit of itself, if it be not abiding in the vine; so too ye also, if ye abide not in me. 21249 I am the vine, and ye are the branches: He then that abideth in me, and I in him, he giveth much fruit: for without me ye cannot do anything. 22250 And if a man abide not in me, he is cast without, like a withered branch; and it is gathered, and cast⁶⁰⁶ into the fire, that it may be burned. 23252 If ye abide in me, and my word abide in you, everything that ye desire to ask shall be done unto you. 24253 And herein is the Father glorified, that ye may give much fruit; and ye shall be my disciples. 25254 And as my Father loved me, I loved you also: abide in my love. 26255 If ye keep my commands, ye shall abide in my love; as I have kept my Father's commands, and abode in his love. 270 I have spoken that unto you, that my joy⁶⁰⁷ may be in you, and your joy⁶⁰⁸ be fulfilled. 283 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I loved you. 294 And no love is greater than this, namely, that a man should give his life for his friends. 305 Ye are my friends, if ye do all that I command you. 316 I call you not now servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: my friends have I now called you; for everything that I heard from my Father I have made known unto you. 327 Ye did not choose⁶⁰⁹ me, but I chose I you, and appointed you, that ye also should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should⁶¹⁰ abide; and that all that ye shall ask my Father in my name, he may⁶¹¹ give you. 3311 This I command⁶¹² you, that ye love one another. 3413 And if the world hate you, know that before you it hated me. 3514 If then ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but ye are not of the world: I chose you out of the world: therefore the world hateth you. 3615 Remember the word that I said unto you, that no servant is greater than his lord. And if they persecuted⁶¹³ me, you also will they persecute;⁶¹⁴ and if they kept my word, your word also will they keep. 3718 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, for they have not known⁶¹⁵ him that sent me. 3820 And if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sins. 3921 Whosoever hateth me, also hateth my Father. 4022 And if I had not done the deeds before them that no other man did, they would not have had sin: but now they have seen and hated me and my Father also: that the word may be fulfilled that is written in their law, 4123 They hated me for nothing. 4224 But when the Paraclete is come, whom I will send unto you from my Father, even the Spirit of truth, which goeth forth from my Father, he shall bear witness of me: 4325 and ye also bear witness, because from the beginning ye have been with me. 4426 I have said that unto you, that ye may not stumble.⁶¹⁶ 4528 And they shall put you out of their synagogues: and there cometh an⁶¹⁷ hour when every

one that killeth you shall think that he hath offered unto God an offering. 4630 And they will do that, because they do not know me, nor my Father. 4731 I have said that unto you, so that when its time is come, ye may remember it, that I told you. 4832 And this hitherto I said not unto you, because I was with you. But⁶¹⁸ now I go unto him that sent me; and no man of you asketh me whither I go. 4934 I have said that unto you now, and grief hath come and taken possession of your hems. 5035 But I say the truth unto you; It is better⁶¹⁹ for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Paraclete will not come unto you; but if I go away, I will send him unto you. 5137 And when he cometh, he will reprove the world for sin, and for righteousness, and for judgement: for sin, ⁵²³⁸ because they have not believed in me; ⁵³³⁹ and for righteousness, because I go to my Father; and for judgement, ⁵⁴⁴⁰ because⁶²⁰ the Archon of this world hath been judged. 5542 And further have I many things to speak unto you, but ye cannot tarry⁶²¹ now. 5644 Howbeit⁶²² when the Spirit of truth is come, he will remind⁶²³ you of all the truth: he will say nothing from himself; but everything that he heareth, that shall he say: and he shall make known unto you the things that are to be. 5747 And he shall glorify me; for from me shall he take and shew you. 5848 All that my Father hath is mine: therefore said I unto you, that he taketh⁶²⁴ of mine, and shall shew⁶²⁵ you.

Section XLVII.

151 A little while, and ye shall not behold me; and a little while again, and ye shall behold me; because I go to the Father. 252 His disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he hath said unto us, A little while, and ye shall not behold me; and a little while again, and ye shall behold me: and, I go to my Father? 353 And they said, What is this little while that he hath said? We know not what he speaketh. 454 And Jesus perceived that they were seeking to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said unto you, A little while, and ye behold me not, and a little while again, and ye shall behold me? 555 Verily, verily,⁶²⁶ I say unto you, that ye shall weep and grieve, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your grief shall turn⁶²⁷ to joy.

658 For, a woman when the time is come for her that she should bring forth, the arrival of the day of her bringing forth distresseth her: but whenever she hath brought forth a son, she remembereth not her distress, for joy at the birth of a man into the world. 759 And ye now also grieve: but I shall see you, and your hearts shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. 860 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. And verily, verily,⁶²⁸ I say unto you, All that ye ask my Father in my name, he will give you. 962 Hitherto ye have asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be complete.

1063 I have spoken unto you now in aenigmas:⁶²⁹ but there will come an hour when⁶³⁰ I shall not speak to you in aenigmas,⁶³¹ but shall reveal unto you the Father plainly, in that day when⁶³² ye shall ask in my name: 1168 and I say not unto you, that I shall entreat the Father for you; 1269 for the Father loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from my Father. 1370 I came forth from my Father, and came into the world: and I leave the world, and go unto my Father. 1471 His disciples said unto him, Lo, thy speech is now plain, and thou hast not said one thing in an aenigma. 1572 Now, lo, we know that thou knowest everything, and needest not that any man should ask thee: and by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 1673 Jesus said unto them, Believe that an hour cometh, 1774 and lo, it hath come, and ye shall be scattered, every one of you to his place, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone,

because the Father is with me. 1875 This have I said unto you, that in me ye may have peace. And in the world trouble shall overtake you: but be of good courage; for I have overcome the world.

1976 This said Jesus, and lifted up his eyes unto heaven, and said, My Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son may glorify thee: 2077 as thou gavest him authority over all flesh, that all that thou hast given him, he might give them⁶³³ eternal life. 2179 And this is eternal life, that they should⁶³⁴ know that thou alone art true God, and that he whom thou didst send is Jesus the Messiah.⁶³⁵ 2282 I glorified thee in the earth, and the work which thou gavest me to do I have accomplished. 2383 And now glorify thou me, O Father, beside thee, with that glory which I had with thee before the world was. 2484 I made known thy name to the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word. 2585 Now they⁶³⁶ know that all that thou hast given me is from thee: 2687 and the sayings which thou gavest me I have given unto them; and they received them, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and believed that thou didst send me. 2788 And I ask for their sake: and my asking is not for the world, but for those whom thou hast given me; for they are thine: 2889 and all that is mine is thine, and all that is thine is mine: and I am glorified in them. 2990 And now I am not in the world, and they are in the world, and I come to thee. My⁶³⁷ holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given unto me, that they may be one, as we are. 3092 When I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: and I kept those whom thou gavest unto me: and no man of them hath perished, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 3193 Now I come to thee: and this I say in the world, that my joy may be complete in them. 3294 I have given them thy word; and the world hated them, because they were not of the world, as I was not of the world. 3395 And I ask not this, that thou take them from the world, but that thou keep them from the evil one. 3496 They were not of the world, as I was not of the world. 3597 O Father, sanctify them in thy truth: for thy word is truth. 3698 And as thou didst send me into the world, I also send them into the world. 3799 And for their sake I sanctify myself, that they also may be sanctified in the truth. 38100 Neither for these alone do I ask, but for the sake of them that believe in me through their word; 39101 that they may be all one; as thou art in me, and I in thee, and so they also shall be one in us: that the world may believe that thou didst send me. 40102 And the glory which thou hast given unto 41103 me I have given unto them; that they may be one, as we are one; I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfect into⁶³⁸ one; and that the world may know that thou didst send me, and that I⁶³⁹ loved them, as thou lovedst me. 42106 Father, and those whom thou hast given me, I wish that, where I am, they may be with me also; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation⁶⁴⁰ of the world. 43108 My righteous Father,⁶⁴¹ and the world knew thee not, but I know thee; and they knew that thou didst send me; and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known to them; 44110 that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I shall⁶⁴² be in them.

Section XLVIII.

1112 This said Jesus, and went forth with his disciples to a place which was called Gethsemane,⁶⁴³ on⁶⁴⁴ the side that is in the plain⁶⁴⁵ of Kidron, the mountain,⁶⁴⁶ the place in which was a garden; and he entered thither, he and his disciples. 2117 And Judas the betrayer knew that place: for Jesus oft-times met with his disciples there. 3118 And when Jesus came to the place, he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, so that I may go and pray; and pray ye, that ye enter

not into temptations. 4119 And he took with him Cephas and the sons of Zebedee together, 5120 James and John; and he began to look sorrowful, and to be anxious. 6121 And he said unto them, My soul is distressed unto death: abide ye here, and watch with me. 7122 And he withdrew from them a little, the space of a stone's throw; 8123 and he kneeled, 647 and fell on his face, and prayed, so that, if it were possible, this hour might pass 648 him. 9126 And he said, Father, thou art able for all things; if thou wilt, let this cup pass me: but let not my will be done, but let thy will be done. 10127 And he came to his disciples, and found them sleeping; and he said unto Cephas, Simon, didst thou sleep? 11128 Could ye thus not for one hour watch with me? 12129 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptations: the spirit is willing and ready, but the body is weak. 649 13131 And he went again a second time, and prayed, and said, My Father, if it is not possible with regard to 650 this cup that it pass, except I drink it, thy will be done. 14133 And he returned again, and found his disciples sleeping, for their eyes were heavy from their grief and anxiety; and they knew not what to say to him. 15134 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed a third time, and said the very same word. 16135 And there appeared unto him an angel from heaven, encouraging him. 17136 And being afraid 651 he prayed continuously: 652 and his sweat 653 became like a stream of blood, and fell on the ground. 18140 Then he rose from his prayer, and came to his disciples, and found them sleeping. 19141 And he said unto them, Sleep now, and rest: 20142 the end hath arrived, 654 and the hour hath come; and behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 21144 Arise, let us go: 655 for he hath come that betrayeth me.

22146 And while he was still speaking, came Judas the betrayer, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude carrying lanterns and torches 656 and swords and staves, from the chief priests and scribes and elders of the people, and with him the footsoldiers of the Romans. 657 23149 And Judas the betrayer gave them a sign, and said, He whom I shall kiss, he is he: take him with care, 658 and lead him away. 659

24152 And Jesus, because he knew everything that should come upon him, went forth unto them. 25153 And immediately Judas the betrayer came to Jesus, and said, Peace, my Master; and kissed him. 26154 And Jesus said unto him, Judas, with a kiss betrayest thou the Son of man? 27155 Was it for that thou camest, my friend? And Jesus said to those that came unto him, Whom seek ye? 28156 They said unto him, Jesus the Nazarene. Jesus said unto them, I am he. And Judas the betrayer also was standing with them. 29157 And when Jesus said unto them, I am he, they retreated backward, and fell to the ground. 30158 And Jesus asked them again, Whom seek ye? They answered, Jesus the Nazarene. 31159 Jesus said unto them, I told you that I am he: and if ye seek me, let these go away: that the word might be fulfilled which he spake, 32160 Of those whom thou hast given me I lost not even one. 33161 Then came those that were with Judas, and seized Jesus, and took him.

34162 And when his disciples saw what happened, they said, Our Lord, shall we smite them with swords? 35163 And Simon Cephas had a sword, and he drew it, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his right ear. And the name of that servant was Malchus. 36164 Jesus said unto Cephas, The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it? 37165 Put the sword into its sheath: for all that take with 660 the sword shall die by the sword. 38167 Thinkest 661 thou that I am not able to ask of my Father, and he shall now raise up for me more than 662 twelve tribes of angels? 39170 Then how should the scriptures which were spoken be fulfilled, that thus it must be? 40171 Your leave in this. 663 41173 And he touched the ear of him that was struck, and

healed it. And in that hour Jesus said to the multitudes, As they come out against a thief are ye come out against me with swords and staves to take me? Daily was I with you in the temple sitting teaching, and ye took me not: 42174 but this is your hour, and the power of darkness. 43175 And that was, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. 44176 Then the disciples all left him, and fled. And the footsoldiers and the officers and the soldiers⁶⁶⁴ of the Jews seized Jesus, and came. 45178 And a certain⁶⁶⁵ young man followed him, and he was wrapped in a towel, naked: 46180 and they seized him; so he left the towel, and fled naked. 47181 Then they took Jesus, and bound him, and brought him to Annas first; because he was the father in law of Caiaphas, who was chief priest that year. 48182 And Caiaphas was he that counselled the Jews, that it was necessary that one man should die instead of the people.

49183 And Simon Cephas and one of the other disciples followed Jesus. And the chief priest knew that disciple, and he entered with Jesus into the court; but Simon was standing without at the door. 50184 And that other disciple, whom the chief priest knew, went out and spake unto her that kept the door, and she brought Simon in. 51185 And when the maid that kept the door saw Simon, she looked stedfastly at him, and said unto him, Art not thou also one of the disciples of this man, I mean Jesus the Nazarene? 52186 But he denied, and said, Woman, I know him not, neither know I even what thou sayest. 53187 And the servants and the soldiers rose, and made a fire in the middle of the court, that they might warm themselves; for it was cold. 54188 And when the fire burned up, they sat down around it. 55189 And Simon also came, and sat down with them to warm himself, that he might see the end of what should happen.

Section XLIX.

1190 And the chief priest asked Jesus about his disciples, and about his doctrine.⁶⁶⁶ 2192 And Jesus said unto him, I was speaking⁶⁶⁷ openly to the people; and I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, where all the Jews gather; and I have spoken nothing in secret. 3194 Why askest thou me? ask those that have heard, what I spake unto them: for they know all that I said. 4195 And when he had said that, one of the soldiers which were standing there struck the cheek⁶⁶⁸ of Jesus, and said unto him, 5197 Dost thou thus answer the chief priest? Jesus answered and said unto him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of evil:⁶⁶⁹ but if well, why didst thou smite me? 6199 And Annas sent Jesus bound unto Caiaphas the chief priest.

7200 And when Jesus went out, Simon Cephas was standing in the outer court warming himself. 8201 And that maid saw him again, and began to say to those that stood by, This man also was there with Jesus the Nazarene. 9202 And those that stood by came forward and said to Cephas, Truly thou art one of his disciples. 10203 And he denied again with an oath, I know not the man. 11204 And after a little one of the servants of the chief priest, the kinsman of him whose ear Simon cut off, saw him; and he disputed⁶⁷⁰ and said, Truly this matt was with him: 12206 and he also is a Galilaeen; and his speech resembles.⁶⁷¹ 13208 And he said unto Simon, Did not I see thee with him in the garden? 14209 Then began Simon to curse,⁶⁷² and to swear, I know not this man whom ye have mentioned. 15211 And immediately, while he was speaking, the cock crew twice. 16212 And in that hour Jesus turned, he being without, and looked stedfastly at Cephas. And Simon remembered the word of our Lord, which he said unto him, 17213 Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. 18214 And Simon went forth without, and wept bitterly.

19215 And when the morning approached, the servants of all the chief priests and the scribes and the elders of the people and all the multitude assembled, 20216 and made a plot; and they took counsel against Jesus to put him to death. 21217 And they sought false witnesses who should witness against him, that they might put him to death, and they found not; 22218 but many false witnesses came, 23219 but their witness did not agree. 24220 But at last there came two lying witnesses, and said, We heard him say, 25221 I will destroy this⁶⁷³ temple of God that is made with hands, and will build another not made with hands after three days. 26223 And not even so did their witness agree. But Jesus was silent. 27224 And the chief priest rose in the midst, and asked Jesus, and said, 28225 Answerest thou not a word concerning anything? what do these⁶⁷⁴ witness against thee? 29227 But Jesus was silent, and answered him nothing. 30228 And they took him up into their assembly,⁶⁷⁵ and said unto him, If thou art the Messiah, tell us. 31230 He said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe me: 32231 and if I ask you, ye will not answer me a word, nor let me go. 33232 And the chief priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. 34233 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said that I am he. 35234 They all said unto him, Then thou art now the Son of God? Jesus said, Ye have said that I am he. 36235 I say unto you, that henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven. 37236 Then the chief priest rent his tunic,⁶⁷⁶ and said, He hath blasphemed. 38238 And they all said, Why should we seek now witnesses? we have heard now the blasphemy from his mouth. What then think ye? 39239 They all answered and said, He is worthy of death. 40240 Then some of them drew near, and spat in his face, and struck him, and scoffed at him. 41241 And the soldiers struck him on his cheeks,⁶⁷⁷ and said, Prophecy unto us, thou Messiah: who is he that struck thee? 42243 And many other things spake they falsely,⁶⁷⁸ and said against him.

43245 And all of their assembly arose,⁶⁷⁹ and took Jesus, and brought him bound⁶⁸⁰ to the praetorium,⁶⁸¹ and delivered him up to Pilate the judge; but they entered not into the praetorium, 44249 that they might not be defiled when they should eat the passover.

45250 And Jesus stood before the judge. And Pilate went forth unto them without, and said unto them, What accusation⁶⁸² have ye against this man? 46252 They answered and said unto him, If he had not been doing evils, neither should we have delivered him up unto thee. 47253 We found this man leading our people astray, and restraining from giving tribute to Caesar, and saying of himself that he is the King, the Messiah. 48254 Pilate said unto them, Then take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews said unto him, We have no authority to put a man to death: 49255 that the word might be fulfilled, which Jesus spake, when he made known by what manner of death he was to die. 500 And Pilate entered into the praetorium, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art St thou the King of the Jews? 511 Jesus said unto him, Of thyself saidst thou this, or did others tell it thee concerning me? 522 Pilate said unto him, Am I, forsooth,⁶⁸³ a Jew? The sons of thy nation⁶⁸⁴ and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? 535 Jesus said unto him, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: now my kingdom is not from hence. Pilate said unto him, Then thou art a king? 546 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said that I am a king. And for this was I born, and for this came I into the world, that I should bear witness of the truth. 557 And every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. Pilate said unto him, And what is the truth? And when he said that, he went out again unto the Jews.

Section L.

18 And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitude, I have not found against this man anything. 29 But they cried out and said, He hath disquieted⁶⁸⁵ our people with his teaching in all Judaea, and he began⁶⁸⁶ from Galilee and unto this place. 312 And Pilate, when he heard the name of Galilee, asked, Is this man a Galilaean? 413 And when he learned that he was under the jurisdiction of Herod, he sent him to Herod: for he was in Jerusalem in those days.

514 And Herod, when he saw Jesus, rejoiced exceedingly: for he had desired to see him for a long time, because he had heard regarding him many things; and he counted on⁶⁸⁷ seeing some sign from him. 616 And he questioned him with many words; but Jesus answered him not a word. 717 And the scribes and chief priests were standing by, and they accused him vehemently. 818 And Herod scoffed at him, he and his servants; and when he had scoffed at him, he clothed him in robes of scarlet, and sent him to Pilate. 919 And on that day Pilate and Herod became friends, there having been⁶⁸⁸ enmity between them before that.

1021 And Pilate called the chief priests and the rulers of the people, and said unto them, 1122 Ye brought unto me this man, as the perverter of your people: and I have tried him before you, and have not found in this man any cause⁶⁸⁹ of all that ye seek⁶⁹⁰ against him: 1225 nor yet Herod: for I sent him unto him; and he hath done nothing for which he should deserve death. 1326 So now I will chastise him, and let him go. 1427 The multitude all cried out and said, Take him from us, take him. 1528 And the chief priests and the elders accused him of many things. 1629 And during their accusation he answered not a word. 1730 Then Pilate said unto him, Hearst thou not how many things they witness against thee? 1831 And he answered him not, not even one word: and Pilate marvelled at that. 1932 And when the judge sat on his tribune, his wife sent unto him, and said unto him, See that thou have nothing to do with that righteous man: for I have suffered much in my dream⁶⁹¹ to-day because of him. 2034 And at every feast the custom of the judge was to release to the people one prisoner, him whom they would. 2135 And there was in their prison a well-known prisoner, called Barabbas. 2236 And when they assembled, Pilate said unto them, 2337 Ye have a custom, that I should release unto you a prisoner at the passover: will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews? 2438 And they all cried out and said, Release not unto us this man, but release unto us Barabbas. And this Barabbas was a robber, 2539 who for sedition⁶⁹² and murder, which was in the city, was cast into the prison. 2641 And all the people cried out and began to ask him to do as the custom was that he should do with them. 2742 And Pilate answered and said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called the Messiah, the King of the Jews? 2843 For Pilate knew that envy had moved them to deliver him up. 2944 And the chief priests and the elders asked the multitudes to deliver Barabbas, and to destroy Jesus. 3045 The judge answered and said unto them, Whom of the two will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas. 3146 Pilate said unto them, And Jesus which is called the Messiah, what shall I do with him? 3247 They all cried out and said, Crucify him. 3348 And Pilate spake to them again, for he desired to release Jesus; 3449 but they cried out and said, Crucify him, crucify him, and release unto us Barabbas. And Pilate said unto them a third time, What evil hath this man done? 3550 I have not found in him any cause⁶⁹³ to necessitate death: I will chastise him and let him go. 3652 But they increased in importunity⁶⁹⁴ with a loud voice, and asked him to crucify him. And their voice, and the voice of the chief priests, prevailed. 3754 Then Pilate released unto them that one who was cast into prison for sedition and murder, Barabbas,

whom they asked for: and he scourged Jesus with whips.695 3856 Then the footsoldiers of the judge took Jesus, and went into the praetorium, and gathered unto him all of the footsoldiers. 3957 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet cloak. 4058 And they clothed him in garments of purple, and plaited a crown of thorns, and placed it on his head, and a reed in his right hand; 4159 and while they mocked at him and laughed, they fell down on their knees before him, and bowed down to696 him, and said, Hail,697 King of the Jews! 4262 And they spat in his face, and took the reed from his hand, and struck him on his head, and smote his cheeks. 4363 And Pilate went forth without again, and said unto the Jews, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I do not find, in examining698 him, even one crime.699 4466 And Jesus went forth without, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple garments. 4567 Pilate said unto them, Behold, the man! And when the chief priests and the soldiers700 saw him, they cried out and said, Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate said unto them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I find not a cause701 against him. 4670 The Jews said unto him, We have a law, and according to our law he deserves death, because he made himself the Son of God. 4771 And when Pilate heard this word, his fear increased; 4872 and he entered again into the porch, and said to Jesus, Whence art thou? 4973 But Jesus answered him not a word. Pilate said unto him, Speakest702 thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have authority to release thee, and have authority to crucify thee? 5075 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast not any703 authority over me, if thou wert not given it from above: therefore the sin of him that delivered me up unto thee is greater than thy sin. 5177 And for this word Pilate wished to release him: but the Jews cried out, If thou let him go, thou art not a friend of Caesar: for every one that maketh himself a king is against Caesar.

Section LI.

178 And when Pilate heard this saying, he took Jesus out, and sat on the tribune in the place which was called the pavement of stones, but in the Hebrew called Gabbatha. 279 And that day was the Friday of the passover: and it had reached about the sixth hour.704 381 And he said to the Jews, Behold, your King! And they cried out, Take him, take him, crucify him, crucify him. Pilate said unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests said unto him, We have no king except Caesar. 482 And Pilate, when he saw it, and705 he was gaining nothing, but the tumult was increasing, took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, and said, I am innocent of the blood of this innocent man: ye shall know.706 585 And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. 686 Then Pilate commanded to grant them their request; and delivered up Jesus to be crucified, according to their wish.

787 Then Judas the betrayer, when he saw Jesus wronged, went and returned the thirty pieces of money to the chief priests and the elders, and said, I have sinned in my betraying innocent blood. 888 And they said unto him, And we, what must we do? know thou. 989 And he threw down the money in the temple, and departed; and he went away707 and hanged708 himself. 1092 And the chief priests took the money, and said, We have not authority to cast it into the place of the offering,709 for it is the price of blood. 1194 And they took counsel, and bought with it the plain of the potter, for the burial of strangers. 1295 Therefore that plain was called, The field of blood, unto this day. 1396 Therein710 was fulfilled the saying in the prophet which said, I took thirty pieces of money, the price of the precious one, which was fixed by the children of Israel; 1498 and I paid them for the plain of the potter, as the Lord commanded me.

1599 And the Jews took Jesus, and went away to crucify him. 16100 And when he bare his cross and went out, they stripped him of those purple and scarlet garments which he had on, and put on him his own garments. 17101 And while they were going with him, they found a man, a Cyrenian, coming from the country, named Simon, the father of Alexander and Rufus: and they compelled this man to bear the cross of Jesus. 18102 And they took the cross and laid it upon him, that he might bear it, and come after Jesus; and Jesus went, and his cross behind him.

19103 And there followed him much people, and women which were lamenting and raving.711 20105 But Jesus turned unto them and said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me: weep for yourselves, and for your children. 21106 Days are coming, when they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the womb's that bare not, and the breasts that gave not suck. 22107 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. 23108 For if they do so in the green tree,712 what shall be in the dry?

24110 And they brought with Jesus two others of the malefactors,713 to be put to death.

25112 And when they came unto a certain place called The skull, and called in the Hebrew Golgotha, they crucified him there: they crucified with him these two malefactors, one on his right, and the other on his left. 26113 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, He was numbered with the transgressors. 27114 And they gave him to drink wine and myrrh, and vinegar which had been mixed with the myrrh; and he tasted, and would not drink; and he received it not.

28115 And the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and cast lots for them in four parts, to every party of the soldiers a part; and his tunic was without sewing, from the top woven throughout. 29116 And they said one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: and the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, They divided my garments among them, And cast the lot for my vesture.

30117 This the soldiers did. And they sat and guarded him there. 31118 And Pilate wrote on a tablet the cause of his death, and put it on the wood of the cross above his head.714 And there was written upon it thus: This is Jesus the Nazarene the Nazarene, the King of the Jews. 32120 And this tablet715 read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city: and it was written in Hebrew and Greek and Latin. 33122 And the chief priests said unto Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, He it is that716 said, I am the King of the Jews. 34124 Pilate said unto them, What hath been written hath been written.717 35126 And the people were standing beholding; and they that passed by were reviling718 him, and shaking719 their heads, and saying, 36129 Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself if thou art the Son of God, and come down from the cross. 37130 And in like manner the chief priests and the scribes and the elders and the Pharisees derided him, and laughed one with another, and said, 38131 The saviour of others cannot save himself. 39132 If he is the Messiah, the chosen of God, and the King of Israel,720 let him come down now from the cross, that we may see, and believe in him. 40134 He that relieth on God-let him deliver him now, if he is pleased with him: for he said, I am the Son of God. 41135 And the soldiers also scoffed at him in that they came near unto him, 42136 and brought him vinegar, and said unto him, If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself. 43137 And likewise the two robbers721 also that were crucified with him reproached him. 44139 And one of those two malefactors who were crucified with him reviled him, and said, If thou art the Messiah, save thyself, and save us also. 45140 But his comrade rebuked him, and

said, Dost thou not even fear God, being thyself also in this condemnation? 46141 And we with justice, and as we deserved, and according to our deed,722 have we been rewarded: but this man hath not done anything unlawful. 47143 And he said unto Jesus, Remember me, my Lord, when thou comest in thy kingdom. 48144 Jesus said unto him, Verily723 I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise. 49146 And there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister,724 Mary725 that was related to Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. 50149 And Jesus saw his mother, and that disciple whom he loved standing by; and he said to his mother, Woman, behold, thy son! 51150 And he said to that disciple, Behold, thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto himself.

52151 And from the sixth hour726 darkness was on all the land unto the ninth hour,727 and the sun became dark. 53154 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, and said, Yail, Yaili,728 why hast thou forsaken me? which729 is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? 54157 And some of those that stood there, when they heard, said,730 This man called Elijah.

Section LII.

1159 And after that, Jesus knew that all things were finished; and that the scripture might be accomplished, he said, I thirst. 2160 And there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and in that hour one of them hasted, and took a sponge, and filled it with that vinegar, 3161 and fastened it on a reed, and brought it near731 his mouth to give him a drink. 4163 And when Jesus had taken that vinegar, he said, Everything is finished. 5164 But the rest said, Let be, that we may732 see whether Elijah cometh to save him. 6166 And Jesus said, My Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. 7167 And Jesus cried again with a loud voice, and said, My Father, into thy hands I commend733 my spirit. He said that, and bowed his head, and gave up his spirit. 8169 And immediately the face of734 the door of the temple was rent into two parts from top to bottom; 9171 and the earth was shaken; and the stones were split to pieces; and the tombs were opened; and the bodies of many saints which slept, arose and came forth; 10172 and after his resurrection they entered into the holy city and appeared unto many. 11173 And the officer of the footsoldiers, and they that were with him who were guarding Jesus,735 when they saw the earthquake, and the things which came to pass, feared greatly, and praised God, and said, 12175 This man was righteous; and, Truly he was the Son of God. 13176 And all the multitudes that were come together to the sight, when they saw what came to pass, returned and smote upon their breasts.

14177 And the Jews, because of the Friday, said, Let these bodies not remain on their crosses,736 because it is the morning of the sabbath (for that sabbath was a great day); and they asked of Pilate that they might break the legs of those that were crucified, and take them down. 15179 And the soldiers came, and brake the legs of the first, and that other which was crucified with him: 16180 but when they came to Jesus, they saw that he had died before, so they brake not his legs: 17181 but one of the soldiers pierced737 him in his side with a spear, and immediately there came forth blood and water. 18183 And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he knoweth that he hath said the truth, that ye also may believe. 19184 This he did, that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, 20185 A bone shall not be broken in him; and the scripture also which saith, Let them look upon him whom they pierced.738

21187 And there were in the distance all the acquaintance of Jesus standing, and the women that came with him from Galilee, those that followed him and ministered. 22188 One of them was Mary

Magdalene; and Mary the mother of James the little and Joses, 23189 and the mother of the sons of Zebedee, and Salome, and many others which came up with him unto Jerusalem; and they saw that.

24190 And when the evening of the Friday was come, because of the entering of the sabbath, there came a rich man,⁷³⁹ a noble⁷⁴⁰ of Ramah,⁷⁴¹ a city of Judah,⁷⁴² named Joseph, and he was a good man and upright; ²⁵¹⁹⁵ and he was a⁷⁴³ disciple of Jesus, but was concealing himself for fear of the Jews. ²⁶¹⁹⁷ And he did not agree with the accusers in their desire and their deeds: and he was looking for the kingdom of God. ²⁷¹⁹⁸ And this man went boldly, and entered in unto Pilate, and asked of him the body of Jesus. ²⁸¹⁹⁹ And Pilate wondered how he had died already: and he called the officer of the footsoldiers, and asked him concerning his death before the time. ²⁹²⁰⁰ And when he knew, he commanded him to deliver up his body unto Joseph. ³⁰²⁰¹ And Joseph bought for him a winding cloth of pure linen, and took down the body of Jesus, and wound it in they came and took it. ³¹²⁰² And there came unto him Nicodemus also, who of old came unto Jesus by night; and he brought with him perfume⁷⁴⁴ of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds. ³²²⁰⁴ And they took the body of Jesus, and wound it in the linen and the perfume, as was the custom of the Jews to bury.

³³²⁰⁵ And there was in the place where Jesus was crucified a garden; and in that garden a new tomb cut out in a rock,⁷⁴⁵ wherein was never man yet laid. ³⁴²⁰⁷ And they left Jesus there because the sabbath had come in, and because the tomb was near. ³⁵²⁰⁸ And they pushed⁷⁴⁶ a great stone, and thrust⁷⁴⁷ it against the door of the sepulchre, and went away. ³⁶²¹¹ And Mary Magdalene and Mary that was related to Joses came to the sepulchre after them,⁷⁴⁸ ³⁷²¹³ and sat opposite the sepulchre,⁷⁴⁹ and saw the body, how they took it in and laid it there. ³⁸²¹⁵ And they returned, and ointment⁷⁵⁰ and perfume,⁷⁵¹ and prepared⁷⁵² it, that they might come and anoint him. ³⁹²¹⁹ And on the day which was the sabbath day they desisted according to the command.

⁴⁰²²⁰ And the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered unto Pilate, and said unto him, ⁴¹²²¹ Our lord, we remember that that misleader said, while he was alive, After three days I rise. ⁴²²²² And now send beforehand and guard the tomb⁷⁵³ until the third day,⁷⁵⁴ lest his disciples come and steal him by night, and they will say unto the people that he is risen from the dead: and the last error shall be worse than the first. ⁴³²²⁵ He said unto them, And have ye not guards?⁷⁵⁵ go, and take precautions as ye know how. ⁴⁴²²⁷ And they went, and set guards at the tomb, and sealed that stone, with the guards.

⁴⁵²²⁸ And in the evening of the sabbath, which is the morning of the first day, and in the dawning⁷⁵⁶ while the darkness yet remained, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary and other women to see the tomb. ⁴⁶²³⁰ They brought with them the perfume which they had prepared, and said among themselves, ⁴⁷²³¹ Who is it that will remove for us the stone from the door of the tomb? for it was very great. ⁴⁸²³² And when they said thus, there occurred a great earthquake; and an angel came down from heaven, and came and removed the stone from the door. ⁴⁹²³³ And they came and found the stone removed from the sepulchre, and the angel sitting upon the stone. ⁵⁰²³⁴ And his appearance was as the lightning, and his raiment white as the snow: ⁵¹²³⁵ and for fear of him the guards were troubled, and became as dead men. ⁵²²³⁶ And when he went away, the women entered into the sepulchre; and they found not the body of Jesus.

53237 And they saw there a young man sitting on the right, strayed in a white garment; and they were amazed.⁷⁵⁷ 54239 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear ye not: for I know that ye seek Jesus the Nazarene, who hath been crucified. He is not here; but he is risen, as he said. 55240 Come and see the place where our Lord lay.

Section LIII.⁷⁵⁸

1242 And while they marvelled at that, behold, two men standing above them, their raiment shining: and they were seized with fright, 2243 and bowed down their face to the earth: and they said unto them, Why seek ye the living one with the dead? 3244 He is not here; he is risen: remember what he was speaking unto you while he was in Galilee, and saying, 4245 The Son of man is to be delivered up into the hands of sinners, and to be crucified, and on the third day to rise. 5246 But go in haste, and say to his disciples and to Cephas, He is risen from among the dead; and lo, he goeth before you into Galilee; 6247 and there ye shall see him, where⁷⁵⁹ he said unto you: lo, I have told you. 7249 And they remembered his sayings; and they departed in haste from the tomb with joy and great fear, and hastened and went; 8250 and perplexity and fear encompassed them; and they told no man anything, for they were afraid. 9251 And Mary hastened, and came to Simon Cephas, and to that other disciple whom Jesus loved, and said unto them, They have taken our Lord from the sepulchre, and I know not where they have laid him. 10252 And Simon went out, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. 11253 And they hastened both together: and that disciple outran⁷⁶⁰ Simon, and came first to the sepulchre; 12255 and he looked down, and saw the linen laid; but he went not in. 130 And Simon came after him, and entered into the sepulchre, and saw the linen laid; 141 and the scarf with which his head was bound was not with the linen, but wrapped and laid aside in a certain place. 152 Then entered that disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and saw, and believed. 163 And they knew not yet from the scriptures that the Messiah was to rise from among the dead. 174 And those two disciples went to their place.

185 But Mary remained⁷⁶¹ at the tomb weeping: and while she wept, she looked down into the tomb; 197 and she saw two angels sitting in white raiment, one of them toward his pillow, and the other toward his feet, where the body of Jesus had been laid. 208 And they said unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? 219 She said unto them, They have taken my Lord, and I know not where they have left him. She said that, and turned behind her, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. 2210 Jesus said unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? And she supposed⁷⁶² him to be the gardener, and said, My lord, if thou hast taken him, tell me where thou hast laid him, that I may go and take him Jesus said unto her, Mary. 2312 She turned, and said unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is, being interpreted, Teacher. Jesus said unto her, Touch me not;⁷⁶³ for I have not ascended yet unto my Father: 2414 go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God.

2515 And on the First-day on which he rose, he appeared first unto Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons.

2616 And some of those guards⁷⁶⁴ came to the city, and informed the chief priests of all that had happened. 2718 And they assembled with the elders, and took counsel; 2819 and they gave money, not a little, to the guards, and said unto them, Say ye, His disciples came and stole him by night, while we were sleeping.

2920 And if the judge hear that, we will make a plea with him, and free you of blame. 3021 And they, when they took the money, did according to what they taught them. And this word spread among the Jews unto this day.

3122 And then came Mary Magdalene, and announced to the disciples that she had seen our Lord, and that he had said that unto her.

3223 And while the first⁷⁶⁵ women⁷⁶⁶ were going in the way to inform⁷⁶⁷ his disciples,⁷⁶⁸ Jesus met them, and said unto them, Peace unto you. 3328 And they came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. 3429 Then said Jesus unto them, Fear not: but go and say to my brethren that they depart into Galilee, and there they shall see me. 3530 And those women returned, and told all that to the eleven, and to the rest of the disciples; and to those that had been with him, for they were saddened and weeping. 3631 And those were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and the rest who were with them: and they were those that told the apostles. 3732 And they, when they heard them say that he was alive and had appeared unto them, did not believe them: 3833 and these sayings were before their eyes as the sayings of madness. 3934 And after that, he appeared to two of them, on that day, and while they were going to the village which was named Emmaus, and whose distance from Jerusalem was sixty furlongs.⁷⁶⁹ 4036 And they were talking the one of them with the other of all the things which had happened. 4137 And during the time of their talking and inquiring with one another, Jesus came and reached them, and walked with them. 4238 But their eyes were veiled that they should not know him. 4339 And he said unto them, What are these sayings which ye address the one of you to the other, as ye walk and are sad? 4440 One of them, whose name was Cleopas, answered and said unto him, Art thou perchance alone a stranger to Jerusalem, since thou knowest not what was in it in these days? He said unto them, What was? 4541 They said unto him, Concerning Jesus, he who was from Nazareth, a man who was a prophet, and powerful in speech and deeds before God and before all the people: 4642 and the chief priests and the elders delivered him up to the sentence of⁷⁷⁰ death, and crucified him. 4744 But we supposed that he was the one who was to deliver Israel. And since all⁷⁷¹ these things happened there have passed three days. 4846 But certain women of us also informed us that they had come to the sepulchre; 4947 and when they found not his body, they came and told us that they had seen there the angels, and they⁷⁷² said concerning him that he was alive. 5049 And some of us also went to the sepulchre, and found the matter as the women had said: only they saw him not. 5150 Then said Jesus unto them, Ye lacking in discernment, and heavy in heart to believe! 5251 Was it not in all the sayings of the prophets that the Messiah was to suffer these things, and to enter into his Glory? 5352 And he began from Moses and from all the prophets, and interpreted to them concerning himself from all the scriptures. 5453 And they drew near unto the village, whither they were going: and he was leading them to imagine that he was as if going to a distant region. 5554 And they pressed⁷⁷³ him, and said unto him, Abide with us: for the day hath declined now to the darkness. And he went in to abide with them. 5656 And when he sat with them, he took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to them. 5757 And straightway their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he was taken away from them.⁷⁷⁴ 5859 And they said the one to the other, Was not our heart heavy within us, while he was speaking to us in the way, and interpreting to us the scriptures?

5960 And they rose in that hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered, and those that were with them, saying, 6061 Truly our Lord is risen, and hath appeared to Simon. 6162

And they related what happened in the way, and how they knew him when he brake the bread. Neither believed they that also.

Section LIV.

163 And while they talked together,⁷⁷⁵ the evening of that day arrived which was the First-day; and the doors were shut where the disciples were, because of the fear of the Jews; and Jesus came and stood among them, and said unto them, Peace be with you: I am he; fear not. 265 But they were agitated, and became afraid, and supposed that they saw a spirit. 366 Jesus said unto them, Why are ye agitated? and why do thoughts rise in⁷⁷⁶ your hearts? 468 See my hands and my feet, that I am he: feel me, and know that a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me having that. 569 And when he had said this, he shewed them his hands and his feet and his side.⁷⁷⁷ 671 And they were until this time unbelieving, from their joy and their wonder. He said unto them, Have ye anything here to eat? 772 And they gave him a portion of broiled fish and of honey.⁷⁷⁸ And he took it, and ate before them. 874 And he said unto them, These are the sayings which I spake unto you, while I was with you, that⁷⁷⁹ everything must be fulfilled, which is written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. 976 Then opened he their heart, that they might understand the scriptures; and he said unto them, 1077 Thus it is written, and thus it is necessary⁷⁸⁰ that the Messiah suffer, and rise from among the dead on the third day; 1179 and that repentance unto the forgiveness of sins be preached in his name among all the peoples; and the beginning shall be from Jerusalem. 1280 And ye shall be witnesses of that. And I send unto you the promise of my Father. 1381 And when the disciples heard that, they were glad. 1482 And Jesus said unto them again, Peace be with you: as my Father hath sent me, I also send you. 1583 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said unto them, Receive ye the Holy Spirit: 1684 and if ye forgive sins to any man, they shall be forgiven him; and if ye retain them against any man, they shall be retained.

1785 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Thama, was not there with the disciples when Jesus came. 1886 The disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen our Lord. But he said unto them, If I do not see in his hands the places of the nails, and put on them my fingers, and pass my hand over his side, I will not believe.

1987 And after eight days, on the next First-day, the disciples were assembled again within, and Thomas with them. And Jesus came, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said unto them, Peace be with you. 2088 And he said to Thomas, Bring hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and bring hither thy hand, and spread it on my side: and be not unbelieving, but believing. 2189 Thomas answered and said unto him, 2290 My Lord and my God. Jesus said unto him, Now since thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen me, and have believed.

2391 And many other signs did Jesus before his disciples, and they are they which are not written in this book: 2492 but these that⁷⁸¹ are written also are that ye may believe in Jesus the Messiah, the Son of God; and that when ye have believed, ye may have in his name eternal life. 2594 And after that, Jesus shewed himself again to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he shewed himself unto them thus. 2695 And there were together Simon Cephas, and Thomas which was called Twin,⁷⁸² and Nathanael who was of Cana of Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of the disciples. 2797 Simon Cephas said unto them, I go to catch fish. They said unto him,

And we also come with thee. And they went forth, and went up into the boat; and in that night they caught nothing. 2898 And when the morning arrived, Jesus stood on the shore of the sea: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. 2999 And Jesus said unto them, Children, have ye anything to eat? They said unto him, No. He said unto them, Cast your net from the right side of the boat, and ye shall find.783 30101 And they threw, and they were not able to draw the net for the abundance of the fish that were come784 into it. 31103 And that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Cephas, This is our Lord. And Simon, when he heard that it was our Lord, took his tunic, and girded it on his waist (for he was naked), and cast himself into the sea to come to Jesus. 32104 But some others of the disciples came in the boat785 (and they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits), and drew that net of fish. 33106 And when they went up on the land, they saw live coals laid, and fish laid thereon, and bread. 34107 And Jesus said unto them, Bring of this fish which ye have now caught. 35108 Simon Cephas therefore went up, and dragged the net to the land, full of great fish, a hundred and fifty-three fishes: and with all this weight that net was not rent. 36109 And Jesus said unto them, Come and sit down. And no man of the disciples dared to ask him who he was, for they knew that it was our Lord. But he did not appear to them in his own form. 37110 And Jesus came, and took bread and fish, and gave unto them. 38111 This is the third time that Jesus appeared to his disciples, when he had risen from among the dead.

39112 And when they had breakfasted, Jesus said to Simon Cephas, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me more than these? He said unto him, Yea, my Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. 40113 Jesus said unto him, Feed for me my lambs. He said unto him again a second time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? He said unto him, Yea, my Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He said unto him, Feed for me my sheep.786 41115 He said unto him again the third time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? And it grieved Cephas that he said unto him three times, Lovest thou me? He said unto him, My Lord, thou knowest everything; thou knowest that I love thee. 42116 Jesus said unto him, Feed for me my sheep.787 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast a child, thou didst gird thy waist for thyself, and go whither thou wouldest: but when thou shall be old, thou shalt stretch out thy hands, and another shall gird thy waist, and take thee whither thou wouldest not. 43118 He said that to him to explain by what death he was to glorify God. And when he had said that, he said unto him, Come after me. 44119 And Simon Cephas turned, and saw that disciple whom Jesus loved following him; he which at the supper leaned788 on Jesus' breast, and said, My Lord, who is it that betrayeth thee? 45121 When therefore Cephas saw him, he said to Jesus, My Lord, and this man, what shall be in his case?789 46123 Jesus said unto him, If I will that this man remain until I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. 47124 And this word spread among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: but Jesus said not that he should not die; but, If I will that this man remain until I come, what is that to thee? 48125 This is the disciple which bare witness of that, and wrote it: and we know that his witness is true.

Section LV.

1126 But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the mountain790 where Jesus had appointed them. 2128 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but there were of them who doubted. 3129 And while they sat there he appeared to them again, and upbraided them for their lack of faith and the hardness of their hearts, those that saw him when he was risen, and believed not.791 4131 Then said Jesus unto them, I have been given all authority in heaven and earth; and as my Father hath sent me, so I also send you. 5132 Go now into all the world, and preach my gospel in

all the creation; 6133 and teach⁷⁹² all the peoples, and baptize them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit; and teach them to keep all whatsoever I commanded you: 7135 and lo, I am with you all the days, unto the end of the world. 8136 For whosoever believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but whosoever believeth not shall be rejected. 9137 And the signs⁷⁹³ which shall attend those that believe in me are these: that they shall cast out devils in my name; and they shall speak with new tongues; 10139 and they shall take up serpents, and if they drink" deadly poison,⁷⁹⁴ it shall not injure them; and they shall lay their hands on the diseased, and they shall be healed. 11141 But ye, abide in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be clothed with power from on high.

12142 And our Lord Jesus, after speaking to them, took them out to Bethany: and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 13143 And while he blessed them, he was separated from them, and ascended into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. 14144 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: 15145 and at all times they were in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

16146 And from thence they went forth, and preached in every place; and our Lord helped them, and confirmed their sayings by the signs which they did.⁷⁹⁵

17148 And here are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they were written every one of them, not even the world, according to my opinion, would contain the books which should be written.⁷⁹⁶ 54: The MS. here has Tabib , but the name is correctly given in the Subscription (q.v .).

55: i.e., simply He began with .

56: The vowel signs as printed by Ciasca imply some such construction as And he said as a beginning: The Gospel , etc. But the vocalisation is of course not authoritative, and a comparison with the preface in the Vatican MS. suggests the rendering given above. The word translated Beginning in the two Introductory Notes is the very word (whichever spelling be adopted) used by Ibn-at-Tayyib himself in his comments on Mk. i. (at least according to the Brit. Mus. MS.), although not in the gospel text prefixed to the Comments as it now stands , or indeed in any MS. Arabic gospel in the Brit. Mus. This would seem to militate against our theory of the original form of this much-debated passage in the Introductory Notes, as indicated by the use of small type for the later inserted phrases; and the difficulty appears at first to be increased by the following words in Ibn-at-Tayyib's comments on Mk. i. (Brit. Mus. MS., fol. 190a), and some say that the Greek citation and in the Diatessaron, which Tatianus the pupil of Justianus the philosopher wrote, the quotation is not written , "Isaiah," but, "as it is written in the prophet". This is a remarkable statement about the Diatessaron . But the sentence is hardly grammatical. Perhaps the words printed in italics originally formed a complete sentence by themselves, possibly on the margin. If this conjecture be correct we might emend, e.g., by restoring them to the margin, and repeating the last three words or some equivalent phrase in the text. It would be interesting to know how the Paris MS. reads. see below, p. 138 (Suggested Emendations).

57: Ciasca does not state whether the word John occurs here in the Borgian ITS. or not.

58: The vowel signs as printed by Ciasca imply some such construction as And he said as a beginning: The Gospel , etc. But the vocalisation is of course not authoritative, and a comparison

with the preface in the Vatican MS. suggests the rendering given above. The word translated Beginning in the two Introductory Notes is the very word (whichever spelling be adopted) used by Ibn-at-Tayyib himself in his comments on Mk. i. (at least according to the Brit. Mus. MS.), although not in the gospel text prefixed to the Comments as it now stands, or indeed in any MS. Arabic gospel in the Brit. Mus. This would seem to militate against our theory of the original form of this much-debated passage in the Introductory Notes, as indicated by the use of small type for the later inserted phrases; and the difficulty appears at first to be increased by the following words in Ibn-at-Tayyib's comments on Mk. i. (Brit. Mus. MS., fol. 190a), and some say that the Greek citation and in the Diatessaron, which Tatianus the pupil of Justianus the philosopher wrote, the quotation is not written, "Isaiah," but, "as it is written in the prophet". This is a remarkable statement about the Diatessaron. But the sentence is hardly grammatical. Perhaps the words printed in italics originally formed a complete sentence by themselves, possibly on the margin. If this conjecture be correct we might emend, e.g., by restoring them to the margin, and repeating the last three words or some equivalent phrase in the text. It would be interesting to know how the Paris MS. reads. see below, p. 138 (Suggested Emendations).

59: Ciasca does not state whether the word John occurs here in the Borgian ITS. or not.

1: Purify their souls. Cf. 2 Peter i. 18. Sons of lawlessness. Cf. Pastor Herm. Vis. iii. 6.

2: Mountain. Cf. 2 Peter i. 18.

3: The righteous. Cf. 2 Peter i. 1; iii. 19. What manner of. Cf. 2 Peter iii. 11. Encourage. Cf. Pastor Herm. Vis. iii. 3.

4: Blasphemers. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 12; Pastor Herm. Sim. viii. 6; ix. 18. Fire. Cf. 2 Peter iii. 7.

5: Mire. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 22. Pervert righteousness. Cf. Pastor Herm. Sim. viii. 6. Cf. Titus i. 14.

6: Cf. Jude 7 Defilement Cf 2 Peter ii. 10, 14, 17, 20, and Jude 8 Cf Pastor Herm Sim vi 5 7: Darlkness Cf 2 Peter ii. 17, Worms. Cf. Isaiah lxvi. 24 and Mark ix. 48.

8: Restless worms. Cf. Isaiah lxvi. 24 and Mark ix. 48. Cf. Esdras, Ante-Nicene Lib., vol. xiii., p. 572; Pastor Herm. Sim. ix. 19; viii. 6.

9: Slandered. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 2 and Jude, vv. 8, 10.

10: False witnesses. Cf. Hermas. Mand. viii. 5.

11: The rich. etc. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 14. Cf. Pastor Herm. Vis. iii. 9; Sim. ix. 20; Sim. i. 8. and Mand. viii. 5. Commandment. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 21; iii. 2 12: Defiled. 2 Peter ii. 10. Cf. Rom. i. 26 ff.; Jude 8

13: Way of God 2 Peter ii. 2. Pastor Herm. Vis. iii. 7; viii. 6; ix. 19, 22.

14: The part of the quotation between square brackets is assigned by Harnack to Clement himself and not to the Apocalypse.

15: Cf. Esdras, Ante-Nice Lib., vol. viii., p. 573.

16: Borg. MS. inserts all above the line, after these. The meaning ought then to be, these things, namely, all the sayings.

17: The Arab. might mean set them apart; but the Syriac is against this.

18: Or, anointed .

19: For order cf . (in part Sin. Syriac.) 20: i.e., becoming manifest .

21: So also in Syriac versions and the quotation of Isho'dad from Ephraem (Harris, Fragments , p. 34), but not the Armenian version.

22: The Arabic sides with the Peshitta and Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, against the remarkable reading of Sin, supported by Isho'dad, as in last note (Syriac text), and the Armenian in Hill, p. 336. see now also The Guardian , Dec. 18, 1895.

23: cf . Peshitta, etc. (not Cur.): cf. also Gildemeister, op. cit ., p. 29, on Lk. 9, 20.

24: Lit. from the side of .

25: Or, in .

26: On the original Diatessaron reading, honey and milk of the mountains , or, milk and honey of the mountains , which latter Ibn-at-Tayyib cites in his Commentary (folio 44b, 45a) as a reading, but without any allusion to the Diatessaron , see, e. j., now Harris, Fragments of the Com . of Ephr. Syr. upon the Diat . (London, 1895), p. 17 f.

27: The translator uses invariably an Arabic word (name of a sect) meaning Separatists .

28: Lit. Zindiks , a name given to Persian dualists and others.

29: Grammar requires this rendering, but solecisms in this kind of word are very common, and in this work (e.g., §48, 21) the jussive particle is sometimes omitted. We should therefore probably render let him give, let him do , etc.

30: Grammar requires this rendering, but solecisms in this kind of word are very common, and in this work (e.g., §48, 21) the jussive particle is sometimes omitted. We should therefore probably render let him give, let him do , etc.

31: cf . Peshitta, where the word has its special meaning, soldiers ,

32: Our translator constantly uses this Arabic word (which we render haply , or, can it be? or, perhaps , etc.) to represent the Syriac word used in this place. The latter is used in various ways, and need not be interrogative, as our translator renders it (cf . especially §17, 6).

33: Or, shall .

34: The Vat. MS. here gives the genealogy (Lk. 3, 23-38), of which we shall quote only the last words: the son of Adam; who (was) from God . If this were not the reading of the Peshitta (against Sin.) and Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, one might explain from as a corruption of the Arabic son of , the words being very similar. On the Borg. MS. see §55, 17, note.

35: cf. §3, 54, note.

36: For the statement of Isho'dad (see above, Introduction, 10), "And straightway, as the Diatessaron testifieth, light shone forth, " etc., see Harris, Fragments , etc., p. 43 f.

- 37: Lit. calumniator .
- 38: Lit. calumniator .
- 39: Borg. MS. omits and .
- 40: Lit. backbiter , a different word from that used above in §4, 43, 47.
- 41: Lit. backbiter , a different word from that used above in §4, 43, 47.
- 42: Lit. backbiter , a different word from that used above in §4, 43, 47.
- 43: Or, speaking .
- 44: cf. Peshitta.
- 45: The Arabic word used throughout this work means Stones .
- 46: Lit. the (cf. Note to §1, 40).
- 47: Arabic Qatna ; at §5, 32, Qatina , following the Syriac form.
- 48: Lit. the (cf. Note to §1, 40).
- 49: The reading of Cur. and Sin. is not known ; but cf . Moesinger, p. 53, and Isho'dad quoted in Harris, Fragments , etc., p. 46.
- 50: Perhaps a comma should be inserted after sign .
- 51: If the text does not contain a misprint the word for by is wanting in both MSS. It should doubtless be restored as in §7, 3.
- 52: Evil-doers could easily be an Arabic copyist's corruption of captives ; but the word used here for forgiveness could hardly spring from an Arabic release (in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, where the thing seems to have happened, a different word is used). In Syriac, however, they are the same ; while the first pair contain the same consonants.
- 53: see preceding note.
- 54: Or, but .
- 55: Borg. MS. has but . The Arabic expressions are very similar.
- 56: Borg. MS. has he did this, he enclosed , on which see §38, 43, note (end). Either reading could spring from the other, within the Arabic.
- 57: The verb may be active as well as passive, but does not agree in gender with amazement . Mistakes in gender are, however, very common transcriptional errors.
- 58: Dual.
- 59: Plural. In the Peshitta it is two individuals in verse 25. In Sin. the first is an individual and the second is ambiguous. In Cur. both are plural.
- 60: Or, he be given it .

- 61: The ordinary word for apostle .
- 62: see §9, 21, note.
- 63: So Ciasca's printed text. The Vat. MS., however, probably represents a past tense.
- 64: cf . Peshitta.
- 65: cf . consonants of Syriac text.
- 66: Borg. MS., that God is truly , or, assuming a very common grammatical inaccuracy, that God is true or truth , the reading in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary.
- 67: Lit. saying .
- 68: Lit. the life of eternity ; here and everywhere except §21, 40.
- 69: i.e., alighteth-and-stayeth.
- 70: Or, knew .
- 71: Or, will .
- 72: Or, good news, and .
- 73: see §5, 32, note.
- 74: Perhaps we might here render learning ; but see §28, 17, note.
- 75: So in the Arabic. It is, however, simply a misinterpretation of the expression in the Syriac versions for at the place of toll (cf . Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary).
- 76: cf . §1, 40, note 2.
- 77: Or, each .
- 78: This may represent a Syriac as .
- 79: see above, note to §6, 46, which applies, although the Arabic words are different.
- 80: Lit. son-of-the-roofs , a Syriac expression (cf. §24, 31, note).
- 81: This is the end of verse 1 in the Greet.
- 82: This word may be either a singular or a plural.
- 83: This word ordinarily means to forge lies against ; but our translator uses it regularly as here.
- 84: Peshitta has easier .
- 85: see above, note to §6, 46.
- 86: A Syriacism.
- 87: The Arabic word, which occurs here in many of the Arabic versions, could also be read bridegroom . The Syriac word for marriage chamber is also used in the sense of marriage feast .

88: Syr. In Arab. it means what?

89: This may be simply a misinterpretation of the ordinary Syriac reading, which in all probability agrees with the masculine reading found in the Text. Rec. of the Greek.

90: Is it possible that the Arabic word after known is not meant simply to introduce the quotation, but is to be taken in the adverbial sense, how representing the Syriac what that is?

91: see §10, 13, note.

92: Lit. other . The definite article is a mistake of the translator.

93: Here, at the end of leaf 17 of Vat. MS., is a note by a later hand: "Here a leaf is missing." This first lacuna extends from §7, 47 to §8, 17.

94: An easy clerical error for And so he regarded (cf. Peshitta).

95: Lit. lead to him .

96: The Arabic word strictly means young man .

97: Or, rested .

98: Or, wick .

99: The Arab. might also mean , And he shall preach (the good tidings) to the peoples in his name (cf . §22 p 47, note).

100: This phrase, in this case adopted from the Syriac, really means, in Arab., morning found him .

101: It must be remembered that we have here only one MS. The Arabic words for Galilee and for mountain are very similar. The words that he might pray have therefore probably made their way here by some error from §8, 9, above.

102: So (with the Peshitta) by transposing two letters. The Arabic text as it stands can hardly be translated. Almost may be simply a corruption of the Arabic word were .

103: The syntax of the Arabic is ambiguous. The alternative followed above, which seems the most natural, is that which agrees most nearly with the Peshitta.

104: Or, troubled with .

105: This is the meaning of the Arabic word, as it is the primary meaning of the Syriac; but in this work a number of words meaning approach are used (and generally translated) in the sense of touch . The commonest word so used is that in §12, 13 (cf . also §12, 35).

106: So Vat. MS., followed by Ciasca (cf. Sin.). Borg. MS. has he that was betraying or was a traitor (cf. Peshitta).

107: This word, the ordinary meaning of which is expel , is freely used by our translator in the sense of persecute .

108: Or, let (cf. §4, 20, note).

109: Lit. this (man) shall .

110: see §10, 13, note.

111: The text is rather uncertain.

112: The text is probably corrupt. Vat. MS. has on margin, i.e. caused her .

113: The adj. is in the superlative.

114: A literal reproduction of the Greek, like that in Syr. versions.

115: Lit. jaw .

116: Or, punish .

117: Or, return .

118: Or, to be given back as much by .

119: Our translator is continually using this word (cf. §9, 23) where the context and the originals require then or therefore . We shall only occasionally reproduce the peculiarity.

120: A clumsy phrase.

121: The Arabic text makes Matthew begin here.

122: The text as printed reads, That thy will may be (done) ; but it is to be explained as a (very common grammatical) transcriptional error. The Cur., however, has and .

123: Lit. unto the age of the ages .

124: Or, folly ; and so in following verse.

125: Or, shew to .

126: Or, for if .

127: Or, will be .

128: Or, your souls ; or, your lives .

129: Lit. falleth (cf . Syriac).

130: The word means to contend successfully , but is used throughout by our translator in the sense of condemn .

131: This is the reading adopted by Ciasca in his Latin version. The diacritical points in the Arabic text, as he has printed it (perhaps a misprint), give second person plural passive instead of third plural active.

132: cf . Lk. 8, 18b. Our translator uses the same word in §50, 5=Lk. 23, 8b; and in both cases it represents the same word in the Syriac versions.

133: Or, Do .

134: The Arabic might also be rendered, What father of you whom his son asketh for bread, will (think you) give him a stone? But as the Peshitta preserves the confused construction of the Greek, it is probably better to render as above.

135: There is nothing about striving . The verb is walaga , which means enter (cf. §11, 48).

136: Or, lambs' .

137: The verbs might be singular active, but not plural as in Syriac versions (cf., however, §38, 43, note, end). In the Borg. MS. the nouns are in the accusative.

138: i.e., so as to be unable to walk.

139: Or, bodies of soldiers .

140: Or, it .

141: Lit, company .

142: Lit, company .

143: cf ., e.g., at §17, 19, §23, 16, where the same Arabic and Syriac word is used; cf . also the ambiguity of the Greek (R.V. has left).

144: Lit. commotion .

145: Or, abundance .

146: The last clause belongs in the Greek to verse 41.

147: Imperfect tense.

148: Lit. and it was for him .

149: cf . Syriac versions.

150: Lit. the ten cities .

151: see §8, 17, note.

152: Lit. went forward to (cf. §8, 17, note).

153: Lit. cast away (cf. meanings of Syriac word).

154: §34, 40, shows that this Arabic form may be so translated.

155: The word is occasionally used in this sense, but ordinarily means sound, unhurt .

156: From this point down to Mt. 10, 27a, is assigned by Vat. MS. to Mark.

157: Borg. ms. reads, but what are granted ye shall speak, and ye shall be given in , etc., and there seems to be a trace of this reading in Ciasca's text.

158: see note to §1, 78.

159: see note to §9, 21.

160: Perhaps this Arabic word is a copyist's error for that used a few lines further down in Lk. 12, 5, the Arabic words being very similar; but see note on §1, 14.

161: Syriac.

162: The Vat. MS., like the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, omits for a farthing , retaining in a bond . The two phrases are simply different explanations of the same Syriac consonants. These are really the naturalised Greek word rendered farthing in Eng. version; but they also form a Syriac word meaning bond .

163: Or, soul .

164: Or, soul .

165: Or, receive.

166: Or, receive.

167: Or, agitated .

168: Lit. And his disciples told John , as in the Greek, etc.

169: A different word from that used in the preceding verse. It is either an Arabic copyist's error for the word for deaf used in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, or a careless blunder.

170: Syriac. In Arabic the word ordinarily means believed .

171: see below, §20, 28, note.

172: see §1, 49, note.

173: The word used in the Syriac versions (Pesh. and Cur.) means garments as well as utensils , and the Arabic translator has chosen the wrong meaning (cf . §42, 44).

174: 6 Certain derivatives from the same root signify bind , but hardly this word.

175: The two Arab. MSS. differ in this word, but the meaning is about the same. Perhaps both are corrupt.

176: Or, a tree good.

177: Or, a tree evil.

178: A comparison with the Syriac text recommends this rendering.

179: Lit. sunk, a word the choice of which is explained by the Syriac.

180: Or, I .

181: Same word in Arabic.

182: The meaning is not apparent.

183: cf. Syriac versions.

184: The first letter of the word has been lost.

185: Lit. that , as often in this work.

186: Lit. powers .

187: The word as printed by Ciasca perhaps means gifts , but by dropping a point from the second letter we get the post-classical word given in the text above.

188: see below, §20, 28, note.

189: The word translated devil in preceding verse.

190: This is an Arabic clerical error for forces . The Syriac word for power means also military forces , which was apparently rendered in Arabic army , a word that differs from race only in diacritical points.

191: cf . Pesh. and A.V. margin.

192: Lit. that (cf. above, §1, 50, note).

193: Or, his life ; or, his soul .

194: This rendering assumes that tower is treated as feminine.

195: Or, it .

196: Or, a king like him .

197: Or, let .

198: see §1, 49, note.

199: see note to §10, 13.

200: The Arabic printed text gives no sense. A simple change in the diacritical points of one letter gives the reading of the Syriac versions, which is adopted here.

201: cf . Peshitta (against Cur. and Sin.).

202: see above, §1, 40, note 2.

203: Or, is seduced (cf . §25, 1-7, note).

204: Or, while .

205: Lit. fatteneth , as in Peshitta.

206: see above, §4, 24, note.

207: The word (if not a corruption of that used in the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, and in §43, 46 where, however, according to Ciasca's foot-note, it was not the word first written by the scribe) is Syriac. Perhaps it means the ends of the earth (see P. Smith, Thes. Syr .). Still a third word is used in §47, 42.

208: cf . §11, 32, note.

209: Singular.

210: cf . note to §10, 8.

211: Lit. powers .

212: cf . above, §4, 24, note.

213: Of the Syriac versions Cur. and Sin. are wanting. Pesh, has Aramaean .

214: Lit. powers .

215: There can be little doubt that this is the meaning of the Arabic. There is nothing like it in the Peshitta; the Curetonian is of course lacking; but the phrase in the Sinaitic is very similar.

216: Here begins verse 8 a in Greek.

217: Perhaps appointment (cf . Moesinger, p. 165; but Isho'dad [Harris, Fragments , p. 65] and the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary have the ordinary reading).

218: Or simply ask .

219: Or, to tell .

220: A misunderstanding at slavish reproduction of the Syriac. The Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary has of Galilee, Tiberias .

221: cf . Syriac versions and margin of R. V.

222: Or, came .

223: cf . the addition in the Sinaitic Syriac.

224: Probably a mistaken rendering of the ordinary Syriac reading.

225: cf . Syriac versions.

226: Lit. travelled .

227: Lit. from .

228: Strictly used of severe chronic disease.

229: cf . §12, 13, and note to §8, 17.

230: The word used at §12, 35.

231: Or, revived , i.e., made to live .

232: Lit. on the border of .

233: Or, for the sake of .

234: Sic.

235: Lit. this .

236: Represents a mistaken vocalisation of the Peshitta.

237: Lit. equity ; see above, §3, 53, note.

238: i.e., therefore (see note, §9, 21).

239: Or, eaten .

240: Or, drunk .

241: Lit. speech .

242: Or, did .

243: Or, was to .

244: Or, him 245: cf . Peshitta.

246: i.e., were holding .

247: Or, custom, tradition ; and so wherever the word occurs.

248: Sic .

249: The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they , resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.

250: The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they , resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.

251: The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they , resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.

252: Here begins verse 9 in Greek.

253: The Syriac word for injure also means reject, deny .

254: Sic .

255: The Arabic word is here used with a Syriac meaning.

256: This clause in the Peshitta is not very clear, and the Arabic version fails to get from it the meaning of the Greek.

257: Or, From within, from .

258: Or, about him .

259: Or, the devil .

260: Lit. six hours (cf . Syr.).

261: For the form cf . below, §34, 40.

262: Or, was speaking .

263: But see note to §7, 38.

264: The text is uncertain.

265: Or, come beforehand .

266: So in the Arabic, contrary to the usual practice of this writer (cf . §6, 19).

267: Lit. to cleanse .

268: This phrase does not occur in the Syriac versions (Cur. wanting), but is obviously a Syriac construction.

269: Or, baptism . The phrase almost exactly reproduces the Syriac versions.

270: Or, baptism . The phrase almost exactly reproduces the Syriac versions.

271: Or, learned .

272: Vat. MS. has he .

273: Borg. MS. reads his person .

274: Borg. MS. reads his person .

275: Lit. that ; or, Verily .

276: So Ciasca's Arabic text. Borg. MS. has If I , and instead of and so, etc ., simply a witness which is not true, etc.; but its text of the next sentence is quite corrupt.

277: Or, be saved .

278: Or, that (man) .

279: Were it not also in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (Brit. Mus. text) we should assume now to be a corruption of an original Arabic reading, for a season (cf. Syr.).

280: This word (often used by our translator) means in Syriac (transposed) believe, think, hope (cf. §8, 8, note).

281: This word (often used by our translator) means in Syriac (transposed) believe, think, hope (cf. §8, 8, note).

282: Arabic Magadu , as in Peshitta.

283: cf . §11, 32, note.

284: The change of a single letter in the Arabic would turn not even into except ; but Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (Brit. Mus. text) also has not even .

285: Lit. What . see note to §7, 38.

286: Or, ye took .

287: Or, ye took .

288: Or, concerning .

- 289: Lit. one , probably representing Syriac idiom (cf. Sinaitic?).
- 290: The Peshitta also omits on him .
- 291: An intransitive word.
- 292: Or, his disciples being alone . There is no such clause in the Syriac versions (Pesh., Sin.).
- 293: The Arabic, which reappears in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (Brit. Mus. text), and seems to represent the consonantal text of the Peshita, is awkward. §23, 34 (Arabic), shows, however, that the rendering given in the text is the meaning intended by the translator.
- 294: Same Arabic word in both places. see note to §5, 11.
- 295: The word is freely used in this work in the post-classical sense of about to .
- 296: The Arabic might perhaps be construed and to speak , depending on began in §23, 40; but the clause agrees with the Sinaitic of Mark, as does the following.
- 297: Or, lose .
- 298: Or, self ; or, soul .
- 299: Or, self ; or, soul .
- 300: see §23, 40, note.
- 301: i.e., already come .
- 302: Or, become white . In the Pesh. the verb is transitive. In Sin. the clause is omitted.
- 303: This rendering assumes that the diacritical point is due to a clerical error. The text as printed can hardly be translated without forcing.
- 304: This Arabic word repeatedly represents a Syriac ran (cf. §53, 11). A different word is so used in §26, 21.
- 305: The Syriac word used in the Peshitta is here translated just as it was translated in §1, 79 (see note); but the Greek shows that in the present passage the Syriac word means go about (cf. Cur.).
- 306: Lit. The son-of-the-roof , a Syriac phrase meaning a demon of lunacy .
- 307: A word used in Arabic of the devil producing insanity; but here it reproduces the Peshitta.
- 308: Lit. becometh light ; but a comparison with the Peshitta suggests that we should change one diacritical point and read withereth , as in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary. An equally easy emendation would be wasteth .
- 309: In Syriac, but not in Arabic, the word means deaf or dumb , according to the context.
- 310: Ciasca's Arabic follows Vat. MS. in inserting a that (pronoun) after thee .
- 311: Doubtless alternative renderings of the same Syriac word (demon).
- 312: Lit. between themselves and him .

- 313: Or, about him .
- 314: Borg. MS. omits among them .
- 315: Lit. one (Syriac idiom).
- 316: In the present work this word frequently means synagogue .
- 317: Lit. millstone of an ass .
- 318: i.e., experiences that test one; or, seductions . The word is variously used.
- 319: Or, is kindled .
- 320: see note to §25, 17.
- 321: So the Arabic; but the Syriac versions follow the Greek, and consent is doubtless a (very easy, and, in view of the succeeding context, natural) clerical error for an original Arabic charge .
- 322: Or, leaveth .
- 323: Lit. blame , a mistranslation (found also in the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary) of the Syriac word, which is ambiguous (cf. even the Greek). For a somewhat similar case see §50, 11, note.
- 324: Lit. wombs .
- 325: Strictly, preferreth , but used also as in the text.
- 326: This word is regularly used throughout this work in this sense.
- 327: see above, §24, 26, note.
- 328: Did not Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (Brit. Mus. text) also read breast , we might assume it to be a clerical error for a very similar (less common) word (same as the Syriac) for neck .
- 329: A different word.
- 330: cf . Peshitta.
- 331: One word.
- 332: Vat. MS. (followed by Ciasca's text) has and if I beg , by a common confusion of grammatical forms.
- 333: Or (otherwise vocalised), fark , a measure variously estimated.
- 334: Or (otherwise vocalised), fark , a measure variously estimated.
- 335: cf . Peshitta.
- 336: Lit. steward of sin .
- 337: Lit. injustice .
- 338: Or, intrusted with .

- 339: Or, true (wealth); but cf. Syriac.
- 340: Lit, badras , an amount variously estimated.
- 341: Lit, dinars.
- 342: The interrogative particle is lacking in the Arabic.
- 343: Or, folly .
- 344: A very close reproduction of the Syriac.
- 345: Or, for .
- 346: This word usually means synagogue in this work.
- 347: Or, heathen .
- 348: Or, to ask everything, it shall .
- 349: So Vat. MS., following the Syriac versions; Borg. MS. has only one seven .
- 350: Lit. beforehand ; and so often.
- 351: Or, repeating a letter, see that ye despise not .
- 352: Borg. MS. omits now .
- 353: see note, §10, 13.
- 354: Lit. great (man).
- 355: Lit. calumniator .
- 356: cf . Syriac versions.
- 357: On margin of Vat. MS., in another hand: "This is the beginning of the second part of Diatessaron , which means The Four ." see p. 467 of Ciasca's Essay, mentioned above (Introduction, 5).
- 358: Or, the scripture .
- 359: This word ordinarily means knowledge , but is used in this work in the sense of doctrine . The commoner form occurs perhaps only in §50, 2.
- 360: cf. §14, 12.
- 361: Or, will be .
- 362: From Matthew.
- 363: From Luke.
- 364: The scribe who wrote the Vat. MS. wrote first God, the one, and then reversed the order by writing the Coptic letters for B and A over the words. (see above, Introduction, 5.)

365: The scribe who wrote the Vat. MS. wrote first God, the one, and then reversed the order by writing the Coptic letters for B and A over the words. (see above, Introduction, 5.)

366: The scribe who wrote the Vat. MS. wrote first God, the one, and then reversed the order by writing the Coptic letters for B and A over the words. (see above, Introduction, 5.) 367: The same word as in Mk. 10, 19 a .

368: From Mark.

369: cf . note, §1, 14. Borg. MS, omits being agitated .

370: Lit. meet with ; or, be recompensed with .

371: The Arabic words are not so strong.

372: Or, so that .

373: Or, and .

374: The Syriac and Arabic versions here agree with the Greek. For a plausible suggestion as to the origin of the strange reading in the text, see Harris, The Diatessaron of Tatian , p. 21, who cites a parallel from Aphraates.

375: This may be simply a corruption of the Peshitta.

376: Or, Surely . The word is omitted by Borg. MS.

377: i.e., probably the eleventh hour (cf. §21, 10).

378: Lit. my thing .

379: Lit. at thy rising and taking .

380: Practically synonymous words.

381: Borg. MS., is like .

382: Used specially of a marriage feast.

383: Lit. bread , the Syriac word for which (not that in the versions) means also feast .

384: Or, omit .

385: Or, that my house may be .

386: Or, saved thee .

387: Lit. between himself and them .

388: i.e., Gentiles.

389: An obscure expression; perhaps it was originally a repetition of the preceding clause. It might be emended into point at him (the finger of scorn).

390: Lit. of course the two of them , and so all through the conversation.

391: Lit. advanced .

392: Lit. find , like the Syriac.

393: This rendering requires the omission of the diacritical point over the middle radical. The text as printed means perish .

394: cf . the extract from Isho'dad (Harris, Fragments , p. 19).

395: A diacritical point must be restored to the second letter of this word. As it stands it gives no sense.

396: Lit. the .

397: cf . Mt. 20, 33, and Lk. 18, 41, both in Curetonian.

398: Lit. saw .

399: Or, near .

400: Doubtless a misinterpretation of the Syriac.

401: Or, if .

402: Lit. house of the offering of God , as in the MS. described by Gildemeister (at Lk. 21, 4); but it is simply a reproduction of the phrase used in the Peshitta at Lk. 21, 3. The parallel passages are a good deal fused together.

403: Lit. between him and himself .

404: Or, gains .

405: Lit, one (Syriac).

406: Lit. and it .

407: Or the teacher of .

408: The Arabic particle means in order that . Perhaps it is a clerical error for so that ; or it may be meant to represent the Syriac.

409: The translator has followed too closely the order of words in his Syriac original, which agrees with the Text. Rec.

410: Syr.

411: The Syriac word.

412: Lit. Increase us in .

413: Or, But .

414: Verse 26 begins here in the Greek.

415: From Mark.

416: cf . Syriac.

417: The difference between singular and plural is very slight in Arabic.

418: Lit. property .

419: A word used specially of wounding the head.

420: cf . Syriac versions.

421: Vat. MS. omits the power . We should then translate (with Pesh. and Sin.) unto judgement .

422: see note, §3, 53.

423: Possibly this is the meaning of the Arabic phrase, which occurs also in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (Brit. Mus. text).

424: cf . the Syriac versions.

425: cf . the Syriac versions.

426: Or, shall .

427: Or, shall .

428: Borg. MS., all of them instead of but they .

429: Or, Moreover, regarding .

430: This simply represents first in Syriac.

431: Vat. MS. has a corruption of Excellent! Rabbi, better preserved by Borg. MS., which, however, adds our translator's ordinary rendering of Rabbi-my Master . This explanation is confirmed by Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary. Ciasca's emended text cannot be right.

432: The diacritical point over the third radical must be removed.

433: cf . Peshitta.

434: Ciasca's Arabic text (apparently following Borg. MS.) has till he before came . This is unsupported by any of the three Syriac texts, although they differ from one another. Perhaps till and came should be transposed. The translation would then be as given in the text above; but this rendering may also be obtained according to §54, 1, note 435: The Syriac word used means both wounds and strokes .

436: The Arabic word is a favourite of the translator's, and may therefore be original. One cannot help thinking, however, that it is a clerical error for mounted (cf . Cur. and Sin.).

437: In Syriac could and found are represented by the same word. The Arabic translator has chosen the wrong one.

438: see note, §11, 11.

439: see note above, on §34, 46.

440: i.e., Gentiles.

441: Lit, speaketh , according to Arabic idiom.

442: Borg. MS, omits with you .

443: Borg. MS. has an adulteress , mistaking the less common Arabic word for a clerical error.

444: Different words are used in the Arabic; so in the Greek, but not in the Peshitta. Sin. and Cur. are wanting.

445: Different words are used in the Arabic; so in the Greek, but not in the Peshitta. Sin. and Cur. are wanting.

446: Lit. backbiter .

447: This is probably simply a clerical error For the ordinary reading, why have ye not believed me? The Arabic words why and not having the same consonants, one of them was purposely or accidentally omitted by a copyist.

448: cf . Peshitta. The Sinaitic omits our .

449: The Vat. MS. has took him , probably omitting stones , though Ciasca does not say so. Take is probably a copyist's error (change in diacritical paints) for took .

450: A different word in Arabic from that used in verses 1 and 6.

451: The Vat. MS. has that we may see the works of God in him . By the addition of a diacritical point this would give the same sense as in the text above, and more grammatically.

452: The Arabic word properly means baptism . The Syriac has both meanings.

453: Lit. Shilbha , as in Syriac.

454: Lit. saw .

455: An easy clerical error for Some .

456: Lit. them, whether this be .

457: Or, why (cf . note, §7 p 38).

458: Disciples is probably simply a misprint in Ciasca's text.

459: Or, is permanent .

460: Or, to him .

461: Or, to him .

462: Or, to him .

463: Or, best thing . Vat. MS. omits from but I came .

464: Or, his life .

- 465: Or, his life .
- 466: Or, to snatch...and scatter .
- 467: Or, my life .
- 468: Lit. epilepsy .
- 469: cf . §37, 6.
- 470: cf . §37, 6.
- 471: Or, hand ; but probably dual (cf . Syr.).
- 472: So Peshitta; but Sin. the . Borg. MS. omits the hand of .
- 473: Lit. which deed .
- 474: cf . Peshitta.
- 475: This in could more easily arise as a clerical error (repetition) in the Syriac text.
- 476: So Ciasca's text, following Vat. MS. But this is probably a clerical error for the reading of Borg. MS., which omits ye .
- 477: cf . Peshitta.
- 478: The Syriac word for Twin .
- 479: Arabic mil , a somewhat indefinite distance.
- 480: This is the Syriac word (cf . the versions, and below, §44, 44; see also Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, ad loc).
- 481: So in Syriac versions.
- 482: Borg. MS. omits some time: he hath been .
- 483: So both MSS.; but the Vat. MS. had originally a reading equivalent to the text above with of omitted.
- 484: The Arabic word as printed (following Vat. MS.) means a place for monks to live in , but we should certainly restore a diacritical point over the last letter, and thus obtain another Syriac loan-word (that used here in the Peshitta), meaning town . see also Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, ad loc .
- 485: The present Arabic reading in going could pretty easily arise from that assumed in the translation above.
- 486: This and the following verb are singular in the printed Arabic (against the versions), although Ciasca renders them plural. A copyist using a carelessly written Arabic exemplar might conceivably overlook the plural terminations. Besides, they are often omitted in Syriac MSS.
- 487: cf . note, §1, 40.

488: Lit. his body .

489: cf . the Greek phrase.

490: Lit. he made (cf . first note to §38, 43, last sentence) 491: Lit. fell (cf . §25, 18).

492: Or, spake angrily to .

493: Lit. cast , as in Greek.

494: Sic .

495: Dual in Arabic.

496: The Syriac versions have the .

497: Or, and, Blessed .

498: The Arabic has to , but it probably represents the Syriac text with the meaning given above.

499: Lit. the heart (or, pith) of the palm . The word pith , which occurs also in the [AE]thiopic version (Ezek. 27, 25; Jubilees, ch. 16) and in Ibn-at-Tayyib's exposition, though not in the Brit. Mus. gospel text, is perhaps used here of the inner branches from its resemblance to the post-biblical Hebrew word employed in accounts of the Feast of Tabernacles.

500: Lit. are found , a rendering due to the Syriac.

501: So Ciasca's text, following Vat. MS. The other MS. has drag , which by restoring a diacritical point to the third radical would give destroy , the reading of the Syriac versions. Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary has hide .

502: Or, soul; or, self.

503: Or, soul; or, self.

504: i.e., used to come .

505: Or, touch .

506: The Syriac word means on the pretext of as well as because of (cf. §50, 11, note).

507: This word is not spelled in the ordinary way. Doubtless we should supply two diacritical points and read, with the Syriac versions, My master .

508: cf . Peshitta.

509: Syriac, same as in §40, 35; Arabic different.

510: Adopting the reading of Borg. MS. (cf . next verse).

511: Perhaps this reading is due to the easy confusion of d and r in Syriac; but it might also conceivably be a corruption of the Arabic word in the next clause. It occurs also in the text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary.

512: Doubtless the Arabic word should be read as a monosyllable, as in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary.

513: see §10, 13.

514: see §10, 13.

515: The Arabic word as printed gives no suitable sense. Either the last radical has been omitted, or the last two radicals have exchanged places.

516: Lit. are "seen" .

517: Or, touch .

518: Lit. boundary or limit .

519: cf . 8, 34.

520: Or, earth .

521: Or, sanctuary .

522: see §1, 49, note.

523: Lit. become .

524: The text as it stands ought to mean I am a light . I am come ; but it is a word-for-word reproduction of the Peshitta, and should therefore doubtless be rendered as above.

525: Or, to save the world (cf . §1, 78, note).

526: see §20, 28, note.

527: Not the same word.

528: Not the same word.

529: So Ciasca, following Vat. MS. The true reading, however, is probably that underlying the Borg. MS. If we restore diacritical points to the radical letters we get deceiving (cf . §41, 31), an alternative meaning (or the word laying wait for , used in the Peshitta. The Arabic follows the Peshitta very closely in this and the following verse.

530: Or, and shewed .

531: Lit. before two days would be (cf . Sin. and above, §39, 1, note).

532: cf . §41, 16, note.

533: Or, that ye be , if we suppose the present text to have resulted from the loss of the second of two alifs .

534: Or, omit that .

535: The Arabic text lacks a letter.

536: Borg. MS. reads you the fruits of wisdom .

537: see §25, 17, note.

538: Or, possess .

539: So the Arabic text; but it doubtless simply represents the Syriac, which here agrees with the Greek.

540: So the Arabic text; but it doubtless simply represents the Syriac, which here agrees with the Greek.

541: So Vat. MS., following the Peshitta. Ciasca follows Borg. MS., which by a change of diacritical points has the hardly grammatical reading, see that it is the desolation, the unclean thing spoken of . Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary supports Vat. MS.

542: This word has a Syriac meaning given to it. In Arabic it means war .

543: cf . §16, 2.

544: Same Arabic (and Syriac) word as in §41, 50.

545: Same Arabic (and Syriac) word as in §41, 50.

546: So the Borg. MS. The Vat. MS., followed by Ciasca, has grief .

547: Lit. the end of heaven unto its end .

548: Or, deliverance .

549: cf . Peshitta, which text the translator seems to have misread.

550: cf . Peshitta.

551: cf . §9, 21 552: Or, appeareth .

553: cf . §14, 24 note.

554: i.e., the steward .

555: Borg. MS. has trusted and faithful . Doubtless we should supply diacritical points to the reading of Vat. MS., and translate trusted and wise . Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, however, has both and wise and the word translated with control , used in a different sense.

556: see §10, 17, and §4, 24, note.

557: cf . § 27, 2, note.

558: cf . § 27, 2, note.

559: Lit. table (cf . Peshitta).

560: cf . Pesbitta (and Greek).

561: Or, and setteth ; but the Peshitta confirms the rendering given above.

562: cf. §17, 17, note.

563: Perfect tenses, as in Peshitta.

564: Borg. MS., the Lord Jesus .

565: Probably the letter that stands for and should be repeated, and the phrase rendered and appointed .

566: So Vat. MS. (following Peshitta) and Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary. Borg. MS., followed by Ciasca, has dirhams of money .

567: Lit. became responsible unto . Syriac versions as in text above (cf. §44 33).

568: The Arabic (lit. a stumbling or a cause of stumbling) doubtless represents the Syriac.

569: The Arabic word means swimmeth . The Syriac versions have is bathed , which Borg. MS. misreads bathed , and Vat. MS. (followed by Ciasca) corrupts into batheth , rendering it swimmeth.

570: Or, This my saying .

571: cf . §44, 9, note.

572: cf . §44, 9, note.

573: Vat. MS. has the word day on the margin, added by a late hand.

574: The misprint in the Arabic text has been overlooked in the list of Corrigenda .

575: Or, kill .

576: The Syriac word is retained. In Arabic it properly means become strong or proud (cf. §38, 17).

577: The Syriac versions have reclining .

578: Lit. fell .

579: A simple change of diacritical points would give the reading of the Greek and of the Syriac versions.

580: A simple change of diacritical points would give the reading of the Greek and of the Syriac versions.

581: Peshitta adds it . The reading of the Sinaitic is doubtful.

582: Past tense in Syriac versions.

583: We may translate, with the Syriac versions, that thy faith fail not , only if we assign a somewhat Syriac meaning to the verb, and assume either an error in diacritical points (t for y) or an unusual (Syriac) gender for faith .

584: cf . Syriac versions.

585: The Arabic word is not unlike the word for stumble , and Borg. MS. omits me .

586: Vat. MS. omits this night .

587: Or, went an saying .

588: Lit. end in . Or, if I come to (the point of) .

589: The diacritical points in both Vat. (followed by Ciasca) and Borg. MSS. appear to demand a rendering inquire for be troubled . In Ibn-at-Tayyib's comments (not the text), however (with other points), we have the meaning wail (root nhb). Every Syriac version uses a different word.

590: Or, ranks .

591: Or, should tell .

592: Probably the Arabic represents a Syriac For I .

593: Different words.

594: Different words.

595: cf . Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (f. 352 a) and order of words in Peshitta (not Sin.).

596: Lit. have known .

597: Different forms, as in Peshitta.

598: More exactly, hast thou not come to know .

599: The Borg. MS. has me clearly (cf . Peshitta). The Vat. MS. is ambiguous.

600: Probably a misreading of the Peshitta (not Sin. or Cur.), since the next clause also agrees with it.

601: Lit. the (cf . Syriac versions).

602: This word is quite unlike that used in § 45, 29.

603: The Syriac form of the introductory particle is wrongly used, for in Arabic it has interrogative force.

604: The first letter of the Arabic word has lost its diacritical point.

605: A possible rendering of the Syriac he was reckoned .

606: The verbs may be active or passive, but are singular (cf . §38, 43, note).

607: Two words from the same root.

608: Two words from the same root.

609: Different words.

610: Or, shall and will , respectively.

611: Or, shall and will , respectively.

612: Or, have commanded .

613: cf . §8, 34, note.

614: cf . §8, 34, note.

615: The Arabic text (Vat.) is grammatically inaccurate, and the Borg. MS. has know not .

616: Lit. sway (as one does in dozing) .

617: Or, the , as in Borg. MS.

618: In the Greek and English verse 5 begins at But .

619: Or, best .

620: Lit. that (cf . Peshitta).

621: Or perhaps receive (them) . Possibly a Syriac d has been read r . But Ibn-at-Tayyib in the text of his Commentary (f. 357 a) has a word which perhaps might be rendered accommodate yourselves (to them) (same letters, but last two transposed), while his comment (f. 357 b) gives ye cannot bear it .

622: Or, And .

623: The Syriac words for remind and lead differ only in the length of a single stroke. Ibn-at-Tayyib (ibid . f. 357 b) almost seems to have read illumine you with , although he calls attention to the "Greek" reading.

624: Same tense.

625: Same tense.

626: Not quite the usual formula, there being here no article.

627: The Arabic might also be rendered be turned , but the Syriac is intransitive.

628: Not quite the usual formula, there being here no article (cf . also §47, 5).

629: Not the usual word for proverb or parable (cf . Syriac versions).

630: So Vat. MS. and Peshitta. The Borg. MS., followed by Ciasca, has and a time when .

631: Not the usual word for proverb or parable (cf . Syriac versions).

632: cf . Peshitta.

633: Lit. it or him .

634: In the Borg. MS. the sentence begins with that they might , the preceding clause being omitted.

635: The above is perhaps the most natural rendering of the Arabic; but the latter is really only an awkward word-for-word reproduction of the Peshitta, which means know thee, who alone art the God of truth, and him whom thou didst send, (even) Jesus the Messiah .

636: So Ciasca's text. The Vat. MS. has I , with the Peshitta and probably Sinaitic.

637: So in Sinaitic. The Peshitta omits My .

638: Vat. MS. has as .

639: cf . Peshitta, as pointed in the editions.

640: cf . §17, 17, note.

641: The Arabic as it stands should mean My Father is righteous ; but it is simply the ordinary Syriac reading, and is so rendered above.

642: Or perhaps may .

643: Mt. 26, 36.

644: Vat. MS. has and on .

645: The word rendered plain (cf . Dozy, Supplement, sub voc .), which occurs also in the text of Ibn-at-Tayyib (loc. cit ., f. 362 b), properly means lake . The word in the Jerusalem Lectionary means valley as well as stream . For the whole clause cf . the text of Jo. 18, in Die vier Evngelien, arabisch, aus der Wiener Handschrift, edited by P. de Lagarde, 1864.

646: cf . Sinaitic Syriac and Lk. 22, 39.

647: Lit. fell on his knees .

648: Lit. let this hour pass . The Borg. MS. omits him .

649: Lit. diseased . The Arabic word is rare in the sense required by the context (cf . Pesh.

650: This reading would perhaps more easily arise out of the Sinaitic than out of the Peshitta.

651: cf . Peshitta. Or, And although he was afraid .

652: The Peshitta (hardly Cur.) is capable of this interpretation.

653: cf . Syr., especially Peshitta.

654: cf . Syr., especially Peshitta.

655: cf . §4, 20, note.

656: Jo. 18, 3.

657: cf . Jo. 18, 3 (Jerusalem Lectionary). In Syriac Romans means soldiers . The Arabic footsoldiers might be man (singular).

658: cf . Jo. 18, 3 (Jerusalem Lectionary). In Syriac Romans means soldiers . The Arabic footsoldiers might be man (singular).

659: Lit. him to -. Borg. MS. probably means bear him away .

660: With is doubtless an accidental repetition of by (the same Arabic particle) in the next clause.

661: The introductory interrogative particle may represent an original Or .

662: Vat. MS. omits than , and has more only in the margin by another hand.

663: The phrase is awkward. The rendering is different in the text (f. 292 a , cf . Lagarde, Die vier Evv.), and yet again in the comment (f. 293 a) of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary.

664: cf . §11, 11.

665: Lit. one .

666: cf . §6, 40, note.

667: Peshitta, spake ; Sin. omits the verse; Cur. lacking.

668: see §9, 7, note.

669: see §9, 7, note.

670: This is an alternative meaning of the Syriac word affirmed , used in the Peshitta.

671: cf . Sinaitic (Curetonian wanting). Vat. MS., which Ciasca follows, adds / him or it .

672: Borg. MS., by adding diacritical points, gets asserted .

673: Syriac order, but not in agreement with the versions.

674: Vat. MS. has anything, when these .

675: The word usually means synagogue in this work.

676: The foreign word used in the Peshitta is preserved. The Sinaitic uses a Syriac word meaning garment .

677: see §9, 7, note.

678: see §7, 17, note.

679: cf . Lk. 23, 1a.

680: cf. Mt. 27, 2; Mk. 15, 1.

681: Arabic, diwdn .

682: Lit. plea .

683: see §4, 24, note.

684: The Syriac word.

685: Or, led astray (cf . §25, 17, note).

686: cf . Syriac versions.

687: Same word as in §10, 16 (see note there).

688: Lit. and there was .

689: The Arabic word may also, like the Syriac, mean thing , but hardly, as that does here, fault or crime . The Vat. MS., pointing differently, reads thing . The same confusion occurs at §40, 35 (cf .

a converse case in §25, 40).

690: So Ciasca's text, following the Borg. MS. The Vat. MS. has plotted , which is nearer the Syriac accuse .

691: see §3, 12, note.

692: Ciasca's text, following the Vat. MS., has disorder . Borg. MS. has division (cf. heresies , Curetonian of § 50, 37)), which by addition of a diacritical point gives sedition ; cf . §50, 37 (Ciasca, following Vat. MS.), and Peshitta (both places).

693: Our translator has retained the Syriac word, which in this context means fault (see §50, 11, note).

694: The word used in Vat MS. means a repeated charge or attack . That in Borg. MS. is probably used in the post-classical sense of importuning him . Either word might be written by a copyist for the other. The came double reading probably occurs again at §53, 55.

695: cf . Syriac versions.

696: This may be a mere clerical error (very natural in Arabic) for scoffed at, the reading of the Syriac versions. This being so, it is worthy of remark that the reading is apparently common to the two MSS. The Syriac words are, however, also somewhat similar. The Jerusalem Lectionary has a word agreeing with the text above.

697: Lit. Peace .

698: This reading may be a corruption of a very literal rendering of the Peshitta.

699: cf . 50, 11.

700: cf . §11, 11, note.

701: see §50, 35, note.

702: Borg. MS., Why speakest ; a reading that might be a corruption of the Peshitta.

703: Lit. even one (Peas.), 704: Lit. six hours .

705: Or, that .

706: cf . Peshitta. Or, Ye know (cf . Sinaitic).

707: Borg. MS. omits and he ment away .

708: Lit. strangled .

709: cf . §32, 15, note.

710: Or, at that (time) .

711: Lit. being burned . The text is probably corrupt.

712: Lit. wood (cf. Syr. and Greek).

713: Or, others, malefactors .

714: Mt. 27, 37.

715: A different word from that in the preceding verse; in each case, the word used in the Peshitta (Cur. and Sin. lacking).

716: The Syriac words, retained in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary (f. 366 a), seem to have been transposed. Vat. MS. omits he , probably meaning but that he said .

717: In a carelessly written Arabic MS. there is almost no difference between hath been written and I have written , as it is in Ibn-at-Tayyib (loc. cit ., f. 366 a).

718: cf . §7, 17, note. Borg. MS. has jesting at .

719: The Arabic text has deriding (cf . §51, 37). Either with is accidentally omitted. or, more probably, we should correct the spelling to shaking (cf . Syriac versions).

720: Verse 37 or Mt.

721: Borg. MS. has boys (an easy clerical error).

722: Our deed might be read we have done , and perhaps our translator's style would justify our writing as for to .

723: Borg. MS. has Verily, verily .

724: A single word in Arabic.

725: Vat. MS. has and Mary .

726: Lit six hours and nine hours respectively.

727: Lit six hours and nine hours respectively.

728: In Vat. MS. the second word is like the first. The syllable Ya doubtless is the Arabic interjection O!

729: The Borg. MS. omits from which to me .

730: Borg. MS. omits when they , and has and said .

731: cf . §12, 13, note.

732: Or, Let us .

733: Lit. lay down .

734: cf . Syriac versions and Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary. Vat. MS. omits the face of .

735: This sentence is a good example of word-for-word translation of the Peshitta.

736: The word is probably plural 737: Lit. ripped .

738: Lit. ripped .

739: Mt. 27, 57.

740: Borg. MS. omits.

741: Lk. 23, 51b.

742: Syriac versions.

743: Lit. the .

744: The preparation used in embalming.

745: Mk. 15, 46. Lit. a stone .

746: On the plural, which is to be found also in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, see §38, 43, note (end). The word chosen might be simply a clerical error for an original Arabic rolled .

747: Lit. cast (cf. Sinaitic).

748: Dual. The clause (from came) is found verbatim in Sin. and Cur. at Lk. 23, 55. Here, after the word Luke of the reference, at the end of leaf 117 of Vat. MS., is a note by a later hand: "Here a leaf is wanting." This second and last lacuna extends from §52, 37, to §53, 4.

749: Mt. 27, 61b.

750: cf . Sinaitic.

751: The two Arabic words are practically synonymous (cf . Lk. 23, 56, Pesh.).

752: Lk. 23, 56.

753: The MS. omits the tomb .

754: Lit. three days .

755: The word might be taken as a collective noun, singular. But cf . Peshitta and §52, 51.

756: cf. Peshitta. The Arabic word is variously explained.

757: The diacritical points of the first letter must be corrected.

758: The Borg. MS. indicates the beginning of the sections, not by titles, but by "vittas amplinsculas auroque oblinitas" (Ciasca, Introduction). Ciasca indicates in the Corrigenda , opposite p. 210 of the Arabic text, where this section should begin.

759: Possibly the translator's style would warrant the translation as .

760: Lit. hastened and preceded .

761: Probably an Arabic copyist's emendation (addition of alif) for stood .

762: cf , §10, 16.

763: cf . §12, 13.

764: The Vat. MS. has a form that is distinctively plural. The Borg. MS. uses, with a plural adjective, the form found in §51, 43. In the next verse the relation of the MSS. is reversed.

765: The word first is less correctly spelled in Borg. MS.

766: The Vat. MS. omits women and to inform his disciples .

767: Inform is dual and masc. in the MS., while the other verbs and pronouns are plural and feminine.

768: The Vat. MS. omits women and to inform his disciples .

769: Lit. mils .

770: Borg. MS., to judgement and .

771: Borg. MS. omits all .

772: Masc. Plural.

773: cf . §50, 36, note.

774: Vat. MS. omits this clause.

775: Vat. MS. omits this clause.

776: Lit. on (cf . Pesh.).

777: Borg. MS. has sides .

778: Borg. MS. omits and of honey .

779: Vat. MS., for .

780: Borg. MS. omits it is necessary .

781: cf . Peshitta.

782: Apparently the Vat. MS. means to translate the word. The Borg. MS. retains Tanai , as both MSS. did in §37, 61.

783: So Peshita Vat. MS. has a form that might possibly be a corruption of take .

784: Or, were taken .

785: Vat. MS. adds unto Jesus 786: Lit. rams .

787: Lit. ewe . For the three words cf . Peshitta and Sinaitic.

788: cf . §45, 3, note.

789: Lit. of him .

790: Vat. MS. omits to the mountain .

791: This seems to be the meaning of the text of the MSS. Ciasca conjecturally emends it by printing in his Arabic text because they after hearts ; but this is of no use unless one also ignores the and before believed .

792: Or, make disciples of :

793: Not the usual word, although that is used in the Peshitta.

794: The Arabic translator renders it the poison of death .

795: cf . Peshitta.

796: In the Borg. MS. the text ends on folio 352 a . On folios 354 a -355 a are found the genealogies, with the title, Book of the Generation of Jesus, that of Luke following that of Matthew without any break. Ciasca has told us nothing of the nature of the text The Subscription follows on folio 355 b .

Grow in Your Walk with Christ

Listen and read messages that will stir your heart for Christ and point you to deeper repentance and devotion.

- 50,000+ Sermons from speakers past and present
- 3,900+ Classic Christian Books freely readable online
 - 1,200+ Bible Translations and Commentaries
- Over 450k forum posts — Join our vibrant online Christian forum

www.sermonindex.net